

A TESTIMONY TO GOD'S WORD

in Regard to Divine Principle

Gil Ja Sa Eu



The House of Unification For World Peace

A Testimony to God's Word in Regard to Divine Principle

Gil Ja Sa

1

Word of recommendation

Tongilgyo, Korean President Seuk Jun Ho

I would like to congratulate Mrs. Gil Ja Sa for the publishing of her autobiography, *A Testimony to God's Word in Regard to Divine Principle*.

All Unification Church members live a life of the Principle. We live our lives with the Principle as our standard of faith. That is how precious the Principle is to us, and no being can know the meaning for its existence without the Principle. We can say that Principle is the arrow which points to where we must go as Unification Church members.

In this sense, I am filled with respect and gratitude whenever I look at Mrs. Gil Ja Sa who upholds True Parents words and work very strongly in order to educate and spread the Principle. The first president of the church, Mr. Hyo Won Eu, who is also Mrs. Sa's late husband, contributed tremendously in giving birth to the Explanation of the Divine Principle and the Exposition of the Divine Principle on the foundation of True Parents' Words and his Original Divine Principle. *The Exposition of Divine Principle* has been offered to Heaven as one of the Eight Textbooks and Teaching Materials. This truly is the pride of the Unification Church and a bright shining milestone in the history of the church.

As the wife of someone of such greatness, Mrs. Sa is now spearheading the spreading of the Principle. She is working with a sense of calling in training Blessed Family wives as lecturers of the Principle. She does not allow any inaccurate interpretation of

the words written in the Principle and she honestly points out errors in order to have them corrected.

She explains that True Parents told her, "Your husband went to the spiritual world without finishing his work, so now it is up to you to take on that task and train leaders and Blessed Family members as lecturers of the Principle." Judging from the words of True Father, I believe Mrs. Sa's family has been born with the mission to teach the Principle. She has been upholding True Parents' command and still teaches Principle to many people with her Hoon Dok Diagrams. She made a variety of teaching material, from the 1-hour diagrams to the 3-hour and the 12-hour diagrams.

Many people in the early days of the church joined as a result of spiritual experiences. They felt impelled to join the church by the great storms that were cast upon them by the spiritual world. Then, these newly-joined members became the people of the Principle when faith settled in their hearts after receiving education about the Principle. However, just as a screw can become loose with the passage of time, we have also allowed ourselves to relax the standards of faith in our everyday lives. When we consider this, I think 'A Testimony to God's Word in Regard to Divine Principle' will serve us greatly by awakening our spiritual hearts.

This book does a fine job in introducing some of the experiences Mrs. Sa had with True Parents while she was attending them. Mrs. Sa felt the importance of True Father's everyday life and examined it closely, which she then turned into the compass which has served to guide her life. This wisdom that she has gained has contributed greatly to the writing of this book.

The dialogues she had with True Parents while attending them are well-organized in this book. Therefore, reading this book is very enjoyable and entertaining. This truly is the everyday-life-Principle which we, the members of Unification Church, can utilize as the compass for our own life. All the members around the world can learn how to live their lives according to the Principle through reading this autobiography.

I wish for the great blessings and love of God and True Parents to pour upon Mrs. Sa, who has written this precious book, and to her family.

2

Word of recommendation

The Continental Director of North American Region, Chang Shik Yang

I am grateful that Mrs. Sa Gil Ja's book *A Testimony to God's Word in Regard to*

Divine Principle has been published.

The Principle is the most fundamental teaching given to us which explains the

purpose and plan for which God created human beings and the universe. Beginning from the time when the Original Divine Principle was first written in 1952, while he was living the life of a refugee in Busan, to *The Exposition of Divine Principle* published in 1966, and to the Original Divine Principle which has given us a more precise explanation about the substantial body of True Parents, these books have been guiding fallen humanity by teaching them the process of restoration as the compass for life and the light that illuminates the path.

As many of the important parts of the Bible are written in symbols and metaphors, the Principle, which is the teaching of the Completed Testament, also requires deeper explanation because it deals with the complicated stories of God's ideal of creation, the process of the Fall, and the Providence of Restoration through Indemnity which has been used as a tool to untangle and resolve the tragic circumstances of fallen history.

The path that fallen humanity has followed in order to be restored as True Children of the Ideal of Creation is the 'Pilgrims' Progress' which all humanity, without exception, must tread. The ones who have shown the example of the way we must tread are the True Parents. As Moses externally and Jesus substantially walked the symbolic course of Jacob, the Model Course of True Parents is the path of the life of restoration and recreation which all humanity of this age in both the physical and spiritual worlds must walk. If humankind and the universe are the creations that are manifested as the "Substance of the Words," then True Parents are the "Substantial Words." The invisible God's original internal nature and original external form have manifested substantially with a physical and spiritual body. Therefore, what is most important in understanding the fundamentals of the Principle are the Words of True Parents and their interpretation. If the Principle is the bone, the Words are the flesh.

Through the Words given to us at Hoon Dok Hwe which poured down upon us like a waterfall regardless of time and place, we were able to gain deeper understanding of the core of the Creation, Fall, the Restoration. Among the many elder families, the family of Mr. Eu Hyo Won, the first president of the church, is the family that has been carrying out the mission of systematizing the words and educating the members while attending the Substantial Body from the closest proximity. *The Exposition of Divine Principle*, which is the systematization of Father's numerous and comprehensive teachings, is the textbook that perfectly explains the fundamentals of systematic theology to the extent that one of the most prominent theologians in Korea praised it as being "a world-level book of theology that Korea has given birth to."

As we all know, Mrs. Gil Ja Sa is one who is filled with Words from head to toe. Her words that fall on us endlessly like a waterfall are not the mere result of learning the textbook, but are the result of her close attendance to True Parents. This is where her testimonies about the Words really shine.

This testimony about the Words is a testimony of Father's interpretation of the Principle. Therefore, it will serve as precious nourishment for those who are hearing the Principle for the first time. Explaining the Principle with True Father's Words is closer to the essence than explaining the Principle through secular examples and stories.

I offer my deep heart of gratitude knowing that Mrs. Sa's testimony of the Words will help the lecturers of the Principle by allowing them to supplement their lectures with the Principle Charts. This testimony of the Words will serve as a manual which will help us understand the eternal rock of our Unification Faith as the Principle that we can apply in our everyday lives.

3

Foreword

As I am writing this book, *A Testimony to God's Word in Regard to Divine Principle*, in compliance with Father's direction, I will start with an excerpt from Father's Words.

"The Word is the record of the tradition by which Teacher gained total victory over Satan. This tradition must be embedded within our everyday lives for us to bring about the Realm of Liberation for heaven and earth. You must spread the Word for which Teacher had to risk his life. Since the Word is the Word from Heaven, Teacher can work the miracle of resurrection centering on the Word even in the spirit world. So the Word is not something that simply flows by us and is gone. It can be compared to Teacher's final testament to his descendants. One day, Teacher will pass away. When he does, he must leave behind the Word. You must realize how rational the Word is, how principled it is, and how it has the power to grasp people's hearts." (1999. 4. 16).

"The Word spoken by Teacher is filled with energy, and people are drawn to it. They continue to follow the Word, even when they are told not to. The Word spoken by Teacher is the eternal textbook. Teacher teaches through revelation, so miraculous things happen. Therefore, Satan cannot lay his hands on it. We must guide people to read the Principle." (2002. 2. 9)

I joined the church in 1955. At that time, there was an incident in which certain students and professors of Ehwa Woman's University and Yeonsei University were

harshly persecuted to the point of being expelled from the school or fired. I was among the students expelled from Ehwa Woman's University during this incident.

It was Teacher's Word, his *jeongseong* and his love that made it impossible for me to leave the Unification Church even after finding myself in this difficult situation. The profound and mysterious Word as spoken by Father penetrated into my heart. Moreover, an amazing spiritual power completely captivated me and led me to follow the Word even in the most difficult situation.

We were young then, and the Principle and the Word spoken to us by Father were nothing like anything else in the world. We could not hope to fully comprehend his teachings. Just as my maternal grandmother used to feed me raw chestnuts as a child by first chewing them herself to make them more tender, Father would explain the Principle and the Word in a way that made it easier for us to digest. Father answered all the questions put to him by naïve and childish students.

Father did not have the time to fully explain the Word in detail to everyone in the world. For this reason, he instructed me to spread his Word throughout the world without holding anything back, just as he had once done for us early members.

Upholding this instruction, I traveled extensively within Korea and around the world, training people to become qualified to lecture the Principle to others. When giving this training, I was always careful to use only Father's Words, and none of my own. Many people were deeply moved by this training. When I reported this to Father, he suggested that I write a book testifying to Father's Words regarding the Principle. He said I should have it translated into English as soon as possible. Many years have passed since then.

I've been following Father's direction to travel around the world, including Japan, the U.S., South America, New Zealand, and Australia and other locations to train people to become lecturers of Divine Principle. This task prevented me from investing much time into

4

authoring this book. I regret that I am carrying out Father's direction only now. The content of this book is derived primarily from the special lectures I gave in the

Mobile Witnessing Team Divine Principle Training Workshop and the special lectures during the 40-day Blessed Wives Workshops that began in 2005 at the Cheong Pyeong Heaven and Earth Training Center.

Please try to get a feel for the immensity of the Word Father spoke to us in the early days of the church, and feel the unfathomable love and the great *jeongseong* and efforts which God and Father made for the Providence.

I would like to extend my gratitude to those who helped to publish this book. I am in debt to the President of *Sungji EDP*, Lee Yong Ok, the former vice head of the editing department of *Sunghwasa*, Park Yong Hwa, and all the lecturers and the employees of The House of Unification for World Peace who gave their support for this book.

The Word given by Father is immensely holy and noble. I repent for my inability to live my life according to the Word. I write this book in the hope that I will re-start the course of the Will by studying the Word given by Father again with you the readers.

June 20, 2012

1st of May by Heavenly Calendar

On the 58th Anniversary of the Family Federation and the 50th Anniversary of Day of True All Things,

President,

The House of Unification for World Peace, Gil Ja Sa

5

Table of Contents

Chapter 1

Introduction

The reason the Lord at the Second Advent was born in Korea

As a Korean, I am both amazed and gratified that the Lord came to this small country when there are so many countries in the world.

The Second World War broke out when I was eight years old and just began attending elementary school. Japanese people had been treating Koreans very harshly even before the war, but things became even worse after the war broke out. The Japanese took Korean women as comfort women and conscripted the men as laborers or soldiers.

After Korea was liberated in 1945, the communists killed a lot of people, and the American army often interfered with us after they came to South Korea. I think it was very difficult for our people always to be pushed around by other countries. No matter

how great a person may be, his fate is tremendously affected by the state his country is in.

So I often wondered: Why are we, the people of Korea, so incapable? What kind of sins did we commit? Do the people of Korea have less value than the people of Japan and America because our ancestors did a lot of bad things? I was strongly resentful about these matters. After hearing the Principle, however, I realized that our people had to go through a 5,000-year history of painful indemnity so the Lord could be born in this land.

The reason the Lord was born in this suffering nation is that God is a suffering God. If we are to become the elder son and the elder daughter who sympathize with the deep heart and the grave situation of God and realize everything that God desires, we cannot be born in a nation that is well-off.

I felt that the Lord had to be born among this race, because He could not have felt the sorrowful heart of God if He were born in a wealthy nation. All the painful history endured by our ancestors, that seemingly shameful history, was something that was very valuable and worthy.

6

Traits of the Messianic Clan and Its History of Indemnity

So the Messiah came to the Earth, but how is it that his surname happens to be "Moon(文)"?

Certain traits are common among members of the Moon clan. For example, many members of this clan have a strong spirit of sacrifice and service. Moon clan members are generally broad-minded and they don't try to use others. In fact, they have often been used by others, but their kind hearts never allowed them to hold a grudge.

Father told us about his own father as an example, saying he was a man of great kindness. For this reason, Father said we should refer to his father as "Chung Bu Nim" (忠父, the Father of Loyalty) and his mother "Chung Mo Nim" (忠母, the Mother of Loyalty).

In those days, old men often smoked cigarettes by filling crushed dry tobacco leaves into a pipe. Tobacco was not sold as packs of cigarettes. Instead, it was sold as crushed leaves packaged in small bags. The town where Father was born, however, was so small that it had no stores where tobacco powder was sold. So a large cigarette store located in another town had asked Chung Bu Nim to take a few dozen bags of cigarette

powder to sell for them. It was a form of commission-based sales. He would sell all the bags and collect a small commission as compensation for his work.

Chung Bu Nim felt anxious when it neared the end of the month, when an agent from the company would come and collect the money. He would worry about the unsold bags of cigarette powder. After a while, he came up with a solution.

Even though all the bags contained the exact same amount of tobacco, customers would handle each bag to see which contained the most powder. This would cause the powder in unsold bags to keep shifting downward, creating an empty space at the top of the bag. Chung Bu Nim would fill that space with tobacco from the other bags. If he began with five bags to sell, this process would leave him with just three.

Father said Chung Mo Nim was much better at economic matters. She was a practical person.

She told her husband, "Why have you done such a foolish thing?"

"If you empty two bags to top off the other three, who will buy those two empty bags? Don't we end up paying for them anyway? We lose money instead of earning the commission. Please stop doing such a foolish thing."

Then Chung Bu Nim replied, "No. The company gave me this responsibility because they trust me. I have to sell all of them and give them the money. I don't mind losing money. My heart is more comfortable that way."

Another thing about the Moon clan: When a person who has borrowed money does not repay it on time, most people will go to that person's house and try to collect the money. When a member of the Moon clan goes to collect a debt and finds the debtor in greater financial difficulty than himself, he is likely to empty his pockets to give the debtor his money. So he returns home with less money than when he started. That is an illustration of their generosity. The Messiah was born into such a generous clan.

Father told us that if the Moon clan did not exist in Korea with their great spirit of sacrifice and service, the Messiah would not have been able to come. The history of indemnity made by our ancestors played a role in preparing for the Messiah to come to Korea as well, but Father said the existence of the Moon clan also played a very decisive role. It is said that in our nation of 50 million people, there are only around 400,000 people who

bear the Moon surname.

Then there was a rumor in the Moon clan that ‘ the Moon King would be born in the Moon clan.’ What would have happened if the Moon King had been born during Korea’s Yi Dynasty period? It is said the Yi Dynasty rounded up and killed many children of the Moon clan.

Many boys were killed during the time of Jesus, and it was the same at the time of Moses. Within the Korean race, the Moon clan paid a lot of indemnity.

A slave in the Moon clan whose surname was Kim once saved the life of his master’s son by switching his own son for his master’s so as to fool the authorities into taking his own son for execution as a Moon clan member. The slave Kim raised his master’s son as his own for a time and later returned him to the rightful parents. This illustrates the path of indemnity the Moon clan had to endure.

Father’s birthplace, Jeongju-gun in Pyeongan Province, was where the Moon clan settled. Moon Seung Ryong, a second cousin to Father also born in Jeongju, told us the members of the Moon clan would become apprehensive whenever a woman in their clan became pregnant. They would remain that way until the baby was born.

The reason for their apprehension was that it was common at that time for babies to be born with disabilities. They often had deformities such as harelips or six fingers on a hand. When such a baby was born, everyone in the community would express sadness, saying “Oh, no. Another crippled baby has been born.” Such things kept happening to the Moon clan as a tribal indemnity. It was because a foundation was needed to be consecrated for God within Satan’s world. Gods’ providence cannot be advanced without a price. This is why it is said there was a history of much indemnity, or paying the price to Satan.

Father told us: “It is a great blessing to become a part of the chosen people with the Moon clan, so you probably have someone who originates from the Moon clan among your ancestors.” Father said the Korean people could not have become the chosen people without the Moon clan. After hearing this, I went to my mother and asked her about our ancestry. It turns out that my mother’s grandmother was a Moon. She told me that her grandmother was very kind and nice. I was relieved to hear that I, too, have the blood of the Moon clan in me.

Father told us: “During your life in this world, you must not try to use others. It would be better for you to be used by others. Also, do not serve yourself but serve others. Do many good things for others. Even if it doesn’ t earn you a profit right away and you feel as though you lost something, your kindness will be passed onto your descendants

as a great fortune. You will be succeeded by many good people in your bloodline.” The Korean race is a very special race that it has such a clan as the Moons.

I'm sure all the brothers and sisters of our movement are aware that the Moon clan originated from Nampyeong in the province of Cholla Nam Do. It is said that the first ancestor of the Moon clan was born as an illegitimate child in a very small village in the Nam Pyeong Myeon of Naju-gun, Jeolla Nam Do. Why was the Moon clan's ancestor born as an illegitimate child? Father said: “It is because illegitimate children are born by the special Will of God.” He told us that God cannot find his lineage in the children who are born to a formally wedded couple, as such children are the children of Satan. That is why Jesus had to be born as an illegitimate child.

The Lord had to be born on the foundation of many events within the Providence of Restoration and thus be born into a special lineage that was not the lineage of Satan.

8

Father showed special abilities as a youth

Our Father talked about the time when he was very young. He especially talked a lot of the time when he was eight years old.

Father told us that as early as when he was eight years old, he could tell a person's future just by glancing at him. If Father said, “I think that old man is going to die soon,” the man would die on the same day. If Father said that one of his uncles who lived far away would come to Father's home on a certain day, even though it was the busy farming season, that uncle would surely come. People around him would say, “It's a busy season for farmers, why would he bother to come?” but the uncle would surely come.

What was even more special was when someone in the town or a close relative of Father's that he knew well was about to get married, Father would reveal what would happen to the couple in the future. Father would often say, “That bride and groom shouldn't marry each other.”

When the elders asked, “Why not?” Father would tell them, “Unfortunate things will happen to them if they marry each other.” The couple would ignore Father's advice and go ahead with the marriage, saying, “Why would a boy like you say such an ominous thing?” Then, what Father had predicted would always happen after some time. He said this happened quite a few times.

So then the elders of the town brought potential couples to Father and asked him, “How’s this man? How about this woman?” If Father nodded, then it was okay, and if Father shook his head, the marriage would be off. After a while, the word got around to nearby towns that a genius boy, a shaman, a prophet, had been born into the Moon family living in Jeongju.

People from distant towns came to Father with photographs of their potential spouses and asked, “Is this a good woman for me?” or “Is it okay for me to marry this man?” If Father put down the picture quietly, it was okay. If he tossed it aside, it was not a good match.

Sometimes Father had stacks of photographs. Many people from different places came to him with their photographs. Once, it became so much that Father yelled, “I’m not doing this today! I don’t want to!” He threw the photographs on the floor and stomped on them.

Why did God give him such an ability? I thought about it, and I feel that God gave him this ability so he could fulfill the Will of God. What will Father have to do in order to create a world where there is no fighting, no hatred, the world that God and all humanity desire? Wouldn’t we have to love even our most hated enemies?

The best way to help people love their most hated enemy is to have them marry their enemy. That is why Father matches many international couples. When you look at the ancestors of Korean-Japanese couples, aren’t they all enemies? However, what happens when a child is born between the couple whose ancestors are enemies to each other? They can’t be enemies anymore. The father is happy, the mother is happy, and the children love each other as well.

So I realized, ‘Aha! God gave Father such ability from when he was very young, because Father had to bless enemies to each other on a global scale. He has to know how to match people if he is to match enemies to each other.

There are three great enemies in this world. They are Judaism, Islam, and Christianity. These three religions believe in God just the same. However, they are enemies

9

who really hate each other. Father sent many peace ambassadors to the Middle East region and hosted many peace events. The people sent by Father were welcomed in both Israel and Muslim countries. That is because Father worked his entire life to unite them.

Father said that when these three great religions are unified, other religions will be unified as well. Once all religions are unified, a unified and peaceful world can be realized. Father said he is greatly concerned about how he will match and bless the enemies who hate each other so much and have been killing each other. It is possible, though, because they are all fond of Father.

Father once told us: “There is one final scene that I want to show God when I go to the spirit world. I want to show God these people saying ‘ Oh! Our Heavenly Father, we never knew You were our Parent. We human beings divided among many races hated, fought, and killed each other, but now we realize that we are brothers. We come from the same God. So we will not fight. Instead, we will love each other and help each other as we attend you as our Parent.’ Then I want to show God these people returning to God with their arms around each other crying, ‘ We were wrong. We did it because we were ignorant.’ ”

Then Father said, “I have to be able to show such things to God and say ‘ Father, the mission of bringing the world of peace which you entrusted me with has been accomplished. The sons and daughters who betrayed you and turned their backs on you have returned.’ Only then I will be able to close my eyes with a smile on my face.”

Such a time is now approaching.

10

True Father receives his calling from God

True Father received his calling from Jesus when he was sixteen years old.

True Father had shown amazing abilities since he was only eight years old. He was deeply concerned, though, over one issue.

His grandfather’s younger brother, Yoon Guk Moon, was a Christian pastor who underwent much suffering as a result of his patriotic activities. Father told us that watching Mr. Yoon Guk Moon made him question: “Why is our nation so weak? We are so powerless. I’ m sad to see our nation suffering at the hands of Japanese people.”

Together with other children in this town, Father often hunted small animals such as birds and eels. Why did Father do this? According to Father, it was because of the children who were at a similar age as Father. During this period, people in Korea did not have much to eat. So the younger children would say to Father, “Older brother, I want to eat some meat. I want to eat something sweet.” They didn’ t have anything to eat, because the Japanese people took everything.

So, Father made a determination that he would make it possible for the children to eat meat. So he dug holes in the ground, used branches to construct traps, and then clapped and whistled. Then all sorts of birds from the sky would dive into the holes and be caught in the trap. He caught many birds with such traps, and the children would eat roasted bird meat to their hearts' content.

The skin around their mouths would often be stained black after munching on burnt bird meat. Father would still have some birds left flapping about so he put the birds inside the waist band of his clothes. The birds would start pecking on Father's stomach and sometimes even defecate. The birds caused him a lot of pain as he ran back to the town to them away to others who were hungry.

One of Father's younger cousins, Yong Ki Moon, was one of the children Father fed in this way. Yong Ki Moon also tried to catch birds like Father by clapping and blowing a whistle. No how hard he might try, however, he could not get even a single bird to come down into his trap. Father was able to catch birds because he had spiritual abilities.

Father truly lived for the sake of others, beginning when he was still a child. He purchased large tracts of land in South America. He said: "Do you know why I tried to feed all those friends and give as much as possible? The Messiah, as is the case with God, is not supposed to let other human beings suffer from starvation." It is the most difficult thing for God and the Messiah to watch people suffer starvation. That is why God trained Father to feed the starving children in a small town.

Father went to prison six times. He told us there are many different types of sadness but the most difficult sadness is the one that comes from 'starvation.' That is why Father thinks, "I must not let people starve. I must solve the problem of people starving to death." Father still thinks "I must solve the problem of world hunger!"

The land in Brazil that Father purchased is so rich with sunlight and water that people can sow seeds and harvest the grain three times a year. In other words, it would be possible to harvest rice three times a year. Father said "We should cultivate farmland in Brazil and tell people in North Korea or anyone in the world suffering from hunger to come there. They can be given land to farm and fill their stomachs." Then Father told us that God trained him in such things since he was young. Father walked such a path of the Messiah even before he was aware of it.

Father met Jesus when he was 16 years old. Father's parents originally came from a

Confucian background. They converted to Christianity as a result of guidance by Yoon Guk Moon, who was a patriot. So, Father discovered God and Jesus, and he started praying very sincerely.

What did Father pray about? Father said he prayed, “God, do you really exist? If you exist, why does our nation have to go through such tremendous suffering? We are suffering from so much pain. What is the fundamental solution?” He prayed very persistently, seriously and ardently about these matters.

Jesus appeared and told him “I came to fulfill everything that you want to fulfill, but I was unable to finish it. That is why I must do it with you now.” Father was so surprised when he heard the voice of Jesus saying “Let us do this together” that he was unable to answer “Yes!” right away.

Father was so surprised to spiritually witness the suffering Lord. What Jesus asked Father to do, he said, was like trying to thread a needle hanging in midair.

Then, why did a sixteen-year-old boy first think about the image of a needle and a thread? I never asked Father about this, but I think I know the answer. Father had many sisters. In those times, women had to go out farming during the day and come back home and sew during the night. To sew, it is necessary first to pass a thread through the eye of a needle. Father must have seen his sisters trying to thread a needle in the dim light of oil lamps. You can probably imagine it too.

There were no synthetic fibers or electric lights in those days, and we cannot even imagine the amount of cotton there was that had to be sewn. His sisters must have worked late into the night on many nights. Father must have seen his sisters trying to thread needles and thought it was very difficult. Threading a needle is difficult even under a bright light, and it’s unimaginable how difficult it must have been to thread a needle as it swings back and forth in midair. He probably wasn’t able to answer yes to Jesus right away, because he thought it was as difficult as threading a needle swinging in midair.

Anyway, after declining the heartfelt request of Jesus by saying “I can’t,” Father thought “If I were to live my life as I want, I would be able to live better than anyone.” Then a question came to his mind: ‘What would ultimately remain at the end of my life?’ He suddenly realized that nothing would remain. Then he began to consider that maybe he would walk on the path which Jesus had asked him to go.

Then he thought again: “How could someone like me do this? What should I do?” He thought of the many obstacles, mountains of them, that he would have to overcome, and all the suffering he would have to endure.

When you go to Father's hometown, Jeongju, Pyeong-An Buk Do, you will see that the house where Father spent his childhood faces a field, with a mountain beyond that. Father used to climb that mountain (Mt. Myodu) to offer sincere prayers whenever he received an inspiration. Then, he said God appeared. God appeared as a pitiful being and begged Father with a tearful voice that said Father, as the child loved by God, must take on the unfulfilled mission of Jesus, because there was no one else on Earth who can do it.

Father said that the sorrowful heart and the sadness of God's voice' penetrated deep into his bones. Then Father felt "Christianity taught me that God is the God of Glory, God of Holiness, and the God of Judgment, and I believed Him to be so, but now that I feel him so closely, he is a sorrowful being who is in so much pain."

He told us that after this experience, he would often shed many tears to see elderly men on the street begging, because they reminded him of the way God appeared him as a pitiful being.

Father prayed, "God, are you really there? If you are, I can't take on this task if I haven't been deep inside of your bosom. If you really exist, you have to stay beside me and live with me so that I can always feel you." Then Father asked, "God, what are the laws of the universe"? This was his first question to God.

12

He asked God, 'What is the origin of universe, and what is the original relationship between God and human beings?' Then God answered, "I, God, am the parent of humanity, and you human beings are my children. Our relationship is the relationship of parent and child."

God continued. "There is no relationship that is more fundamental than the parent-child relationship," He said. "All relationships are created through this relationship. However, what saddens me the most is the fact that I have never been able to relate to humanity as a parent. My enemy has taken all of my children away. I still wander around in tears looking for my beloved children."

Then Father deeply realized that God is in the position of greatest suffering and in the loneliest place of all. Realizing that "humanity's suffering will not end unless the suffering heart of our Parent God is first relieved," Father answered, "Is it really so? Then I will do it!"

God then spoke to Father again, saying, "Yes, you have to do it. You are saddened by the suffering of the people of Korea, but suffering people exist all over the world. You

must save all the people in the world and return them to me.” Father then accepted the request of God and Jesus.

How did Father endure such great pain? How could he endure vomiting blood? How could he stand right back up, even in situations where it would be impossible to get back up? Father told us it was because he knew that “humanity has never known about the pitiful God who suffers unspeakable pain. I have to first liberate God from such pain and relieve Him of His sorrowful heart. If I don’ t liberate God from pain and relieve his sorrowful heart, who will do this? If we can’ t liberate God from pain and relieve his heart, people will never be free from pain and the sorrow in their hearts will never be relieved.”

Humanity has always known God as the God of Glory, but for the first time in human history, Father has uncovered the truth that God is a pitiful God.

13

A Test Lets Father experience God’s Love

Father said God at first promised him infinite blessing. God blessed Father as Isaac blessed Jacob: “You will be in the most glorious position among your brothers.” Jacob, though, had to escape to the hell that was Haran and spend 21 years there to avoid the wrath of Esau. In a similar way, God sent Satan to Father, even though He had promised to put Father in the highest position.

I want to digress for a moment on this topic.

At which stage did Adam and Eve fall? Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage. God established Father when he was at the same stage in his life so that he could represent all of humanity in order to restore this stage.

Father needed to soundly defeat Satan in this matter of *shimjeong* and pass the test.

The Providence of Restoration can only be completed when God’s 95% portion of responsibility and the 5% human portion of responsibility are combined. This is why Father had to fight Satan in a bloody battle known only to God and Satan during his quest to discover the Principle.

Then, what was God’s portion of responsibility here? God’s responsibility was to give questions to Father. For example, God would ask Father “Why did I not interfere with the Fall of your ancestors, Adam and Eve? Find the answer to this question!” When Father set out to find the answer to the questions, Satan attacked Father in the form of

compressed air and tried to interfere with his breathing. It became so bad sometimes that Father couldn't even breathe.

It's been already 50 years since Father told us this. He says when he prays, the time's almost here. Father said Satan's attacks were more ferocious than anything we could imagine.

Father said Satan's attacks were beyond description. Placed in a position of having been abandoned by Heaven, Father endured excruciating pain, successfully found the answers to God's questions and managed to ascend to the completion level of the growth stage.

The Archangel was able to speak to Adam and Even when they fell. It is likely that the Archangel also spoke to Father, but he spoke so as to confuse Father. The Archangel spoke of things that were opposite to the Principle. Father was exposed to the danger of making mistakes, because Father at the time was still in the Realm of Indirect Dominion where God could not intervene. In order not to be deceived by Satan, Father would go in the opposite direction of whatever direction Satan would tell him to go. Father kept fighting back.

Father would work hard to find an answer to a question. When he brought that answer to God for confirmation, though, God would say it wasn't correct. God had to do this to indemnify the history when the son denied his father; the father had to deny his son this time. When God denied Father like this, all spiritual beings of higher status such as Jesus would also deny Father and refuse to accept him.

Moreover, God even left Father when Satan's attack became very harsh. Father said he felt so much pain because of this. Jesus had only God to depend on when he was bearing the cross. He only had God. God, though, abandoned him. That is why Jesus cried "Father! Why did you forsake me?"

Father spoke of such mysterious ways of the providence. He pointed out that the physical pain of Jesus ended when the pain of the cross ended. Father said, however, that

14

the pain he felt while carrying the cross of *shimjeong* was incomparable to the physical pain of Jesus. Father said, "What would you know even if I told you this?"

Father said that, when God abandoned him during Satan's attack, it was as if he had been thrown into a completely black void. He could not even be conscious of where he

was. The reason we stand balanced on the ground and enjoy the sunlight is that God protects us. When God abandoned Father, there was no light or creation. Father could not tell where his physical body was or where his spiritual body was. In such a position, Father felt, "This must be the situation Jesus found himself in."

At that time, Satan appeared to Father and taunted, "Will you still not succumb to me?" Father, though, never doubted or held resentment against God because of the promise God made to him. Seeing that Father was unwavering, never complaining about his situation, Satan, in the end, raised his hands up high and gave up.

Satan said, "Normally when a person in this situation blames God. I have never seen anyone like this." Then, he backed off.

Then God came to Father in tears. He cried so violently it shook heaven and earth. God then embraced Father saying "I have finally found my son." Father told us that God's love was so great then that it penetrated the marrow of his bones. Then, Jesus and all the spiritual beings who denied and persecuted Father returned as well.

What did God's love feel like then? Father said His love was completely absent of any hatred or enmity. There was not even a concept of such feelings. We human beings are prone to hate and feel betrayed when we are even slightly mistreated. Then we regard those persons as our enemies. When Father experienced the Love of God, it was completely different from any other love he had known before then.

We've heard that Father as a child was short-tempered, he liked to get even, and he once felt so angry just to lose a wrestling match that he couldn't sleep, right? He had a very scary character which dictated that he had to win. Father told us, though, that he changed completely after being melted in the Love of God. After this, Father couldn't hold a grudge against anyone for too long. He said any emotion of hatred would cause him pain.

In the Garden of Eden, Eve fell for the sweet-talk of the Archangel because the Archangel was very good with words. Eve was intelligent, so the Archangel could not have deceived her unless he was good with words. The Archangel knew what God was going to do in the future, so he used God's plan first. The Archangel's words were very close to the Principle but he spoke centering on himself. Here, Father had to wrestle with the Archangel in battles of wisdom, and it was very difficult to discern what was principled and what was not.

"Father, how did you know what was principled?" I asked him one day. Father said "I was able to tell what was what because I discarded the evil-mind." So then I asked,

“Then what was the evil-mind?” Father answered, “The evil-mind is self-centeredness.”

It is explained in more detail in the Divine Principle chapter titled "Fall of Man", but selfishness is centering on oneself. It means that the reason the Archangel became Satan was that he was self-centered.

If the Archangel had centered himself on God and Adam and Eve, he wouldn't have fallen. The Archangel thought “I've been a faithful servant to God but now I am just a mere slave now that He has His own son and daughter.” In other words, the Archangel reflected and thought “Who am I?” Such self-centeredness was the seed that grew into the Fall.

So we must remember that we are unable to meet God unless we completely discard our self-centeredness and deny ourselves while living a life of faith. Self-denial is very important. This is the first trait that we need in walking this path of faith. After choosing Father as the Messiah, God put Father through the harsh training of self-denial.

God had Father do not the things he enjoyed or wanted to do, but only the things that he hated doing and didn't want to do. Doing the things that you don't like, doing the

15

things you can't do is the way to train yourself in self-denial. Then, Satan cannot follow you. Father realized that it was God's plan only after he passed the rigorous training course of self-denial.

Father gave us an example. Father entered America in 1971 but the way into America was a difficult one. He couldn't even go directly to America but had to take a detour through Canada. The Christians were about to kick Rev. Moon of the Unification Church out of the country even if said nothing and did nothing wrong. Father was a religious leader who wasn't even widely-accepted in his own country. Christians in America were watching Father's every move.

Father was in a very difficult situation. Nobody knew what would happen to him because of the connection between Korea's Christianity and American missionaries. Then, God ordered Father to go meet President Richard M. Nixon. In the end, Father met the President. When Father first heard God's order to meet Nixon, not only was he surprised but he had no idea how to make it happen.

However, knowing that this was the Will of God, Father prayed with many tears. Father cried when he prayed but he couldn't cry in front of Mother or his children, let alone in front of the members. Why? Because Father was the hope of all hopes. Father thought about how we could follow him if we saw him shedding tears because he was worried or because he didn't know what to do.

Father told us that he told Mother, his children, and us that he was confident, but then he would turn around and shed tears. We were dumfounded when we later learned this. At that time, the people around Father were recommending that he not meet President Nixon.

Father then had to shed many tears and set up a conditional period all alone before he was finally able to meet the President. As we can see from this, the things that Father does are not done easily. Father has offered immeasurable amounts of *jeongseong* so as to do things that ordinary people could not do.

Father is a human being just like us, but how is he different? Father knows the spiritual world and he has the heart to fight and defeat Satan. That is the difference between Father and us.

How evil was Kim Il Sung? He killed a lot of people. Before Father went to North Korea to meet Kim, he went to Hawaii to offer Heaven the last prayer so he could overcome his hatred for Kim.

“I can't hate him even if the whole world hates him and accuses him of being a murderer. If I hate him too, he cannot be saved. Then what kind of heart will I have to have when I see him? Yes, I will go there as his father who gave birth to him. People might say ‘ Kim Il Sung is a murderer, execute him, shoot him,’ but if his father were there, he would still say with the heart of a father, ‘ My son is a bad person but I still want to see him in front of me.’ Kim Il Sung's father would do anything to save his son's life. I will go with that kind of heart!”

Father was able to hug Kim Il Sung without any hesitation when he saw him, because he went to North Korea with this kind of heart. Kim Il Sung was able to feel Father's love.

Bo Hi Park said something interesting after returning from Pyongyang. He said he stood behind Father and ended up hugging Kim Il Sung, too. However, when he hugged Kim Il Sung, his heart was filled with curses such as “You murderer!” He acted exactly the same as Father outwardly, but his heart was completely different. Then he

felt that there is a clear difference between the heart of parents and the heart of brothers.

God molded Father's character and his ability to love. Also, because God is always with Father, his ability to love is on a different level from ordinary people. I've felt that many times in my life.

16

Father discovered every detail of the Principle after fighting bloody battles against Satan. Father told us he sometimes feel angry to have to give the Principle to people who are unworthy and never made any contribution to the providence. However, he said he still gives the Principle without receiving anything in return, because he has to save all of humanity.

I can't fully express the sorrowful, indignant heart of Father. However, this knowledge will help you in some cases.

17

What Father needed to fulfill his Messianic mission

Father asked himself, "What do I need to begin the work of saving humanity?"

Ordinary people do not know God well. Nor do they know Jesus and the spirit world. They do not know what happens in the world that is invisible to them. That is why Father thought, "I must first teach people about these matters, I will need a systematic ideology."

Then he felt: "I must have power if I am to educate humanity and bring them to God. I must have power, financial power!" He thought, "Oh, I need an ideology and financial power. Just as a train runs on two tracks, those two things will be equally important."

Ideology and economy are like our mind and body. Just as human beings can have a wholesome life by uniting their mind and body, ideology and financial power are absolutely critical as well.

Then what is this ideology? It is the Principle. Then, what is the Principle? In simple terms, it is the Bible plus nature. Father explained all the secrets of the Bible that were not explained before. Father claimed victories in the wars against Satan so as to take back the secrets of the Bible stolen by Satan.

What is nature? Nature means all created things. Humans fell, but nature didn't. Nature has not changed, since it did not fall. It is eternally unchanging. Nature still has the character of God and lives for the sake of others.

Father realized that humanity has to live for the sake of others in order to return to God. He found this Principle more in nature than he did from the Bible.

If you read Father's autobiography, there is a part that says, "Each species [of fish] feeds on something different. Living together in a complex system, they devour anything that dirties the water. Their act of feeding has the function of keeping the water pure. Fish are very different from human beings. Fish don't live for their own sake. They live to clean their environment and make it better."

Have you seen nature wage war? The created beings in nature live in harmony, help each other, and maintain peace. Strong animals, of course, sometimes eat weaker animals, but they do it not because they hate their prey but because they have no alternative.

If we human beings did not Fall, we would have never fought over food. Everything is created for human beings, so we can live in abundance easily.

Father has said the ocean has infinite resources. It is said that there are lots of diamonds in the jungles of Africa where fierce predators like lions roam. They protect the resources from fallen human beings.

God calculated everything before He created this infinite amount of natural resources so that human beings would not have to starve. However, people wage war on each other, not because they are in need but because of their greed, trying to hoard as much as possible to satisfy themselves.

True Father told us that the other name for Principle is 'Natural Law.' Therefore, the Principle is not a religious dogma that has to be taught within the Unification Church and that only Unification Church members must obey. Instead, it is the natural law that was created by God which must be obeyed by everyone.

Therefore, we cannot return to God unless all of humanity knows the Principle. That is why we learn the Principle. Besides the seven billion people on Earth, what about the people in the spirit world? Spiritual beings must learn the Principle as well.

So we need many Principle lecturers. We need an ocean of them. Father already foresaw this and told me, "Educate the wives of Blessed Families to become lecturers of Principle. Your husband went to the spirit world without fulfilling this task, so now it

is up to you.” After listening to Father’s command, I felt, “Oh, this truly is my mission.”

18

Purpose for publishing *Explanation of the Divine Principle* and *Exposition of the Divine Principle*

The publication of *Exposition of Divine Principle* in 1966 followed the publication of *Explanation of Divine Principle* () by nine years.

Exposition of Divine Principle was published when Father gave the direction to rewrite the Principle text to be more systematic and logical so the lecture could be given by just reading the book. One member who joined the church after attending a lecture on *The Exposition of Divine Principle* testified that he was greatly moved when he heard the lectures.

Explanation of Divine Principle was shorter than *Exposition of Divine Principle* and it was almost like a written appeal. In the past, when there was about to be a war, the government would post a written appeal in all the villages around the country in order to recruit soldiers. The appeal would say something like, “Young people of this nation! We have a war to fight. Drop your hoes and plows and come defend your nation!”

Explanation of Divine Principle was a similar written appeal. It was conscious of the strong opposition from Christianity at the time it was published. It called on Christians to “Come and rally!” now that the secret of God that had been kept hidden from humanity for the last 6,000 years had been revealed. It was similar in the way John the Baptist, while he was in the wilderness, shouted to the people “Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand!” For these reasons, *Explanation of Divine Principle* contained many more Bible quotes than *Exposition of Divine Principle*.

Exposition of Divine Principle was published to develop lecturers. Father once told us, “I told President Hyo Won Eu to organize it so that a lecture could be given easily just by reading it, but he didn’t listen to my direction.” Then Father told me, “You must complete the work your husband couldn’t finish.”

There was a reason why President Eu did that. During the early period of our church, many people came to our church demanding that we return their husbands, wives, sons, or daughters or even the church members who quit their own churches to join ours. President Eu thought that he had to give a very passionate lecture, shooting out many examples at them like a machine gun so the people who opposed us would understand and accept us.

However, Father was very disappointed when he heard that many pastors and Principle lecturers still lecture the Principle like the early period of the church, even though Heaven's Will is materializing more concretely, thinking that to be the orthodox method. Father originally wanted people to lecture on the Principle while reading *Exposition of Divine Principle*.

The book was very long and its contents very deep. The lectures required a lot of time. Father directed us to summarize *Exposition of Divine Principle* and create diagrams for it to save time. This is why today we have the *Divine Principle Summary Hoon Dok Charts* (1-hour, 3-hour, and 12-hour charts), and we are giving lectures with these charts.

In the early days, Father shed tears and sweat during Divine Principle lectures and Sunday services. His Words, filled with grace, caused many spiritual miracles. Many people received spiritual fire, spoke in tongues, and received revelations. Many received testimony from the spirit world about who Father was. This is why many such people joined our church even though Christian churches opposed us so harshly.

When I asked former President Eu "Why is *Exposition of Divine Principle* so difficult to understand?" (because I was having much difficulty while studying the Divine Principle) he answered, "Did I write the book for the current Unification Church members' level? No. I

19

wrote it for the prominent scholars and theologians who will read this book one day." Father once told us, "Scholars all over the world will have to wear the hat called

Divine Principle if they want to perfect their expertise. There will be no perfection in scholarship unless one wears the hat of Divine Principle." For example, Unification Thought is one of the fields that has been perfected.

20

The top five lessons in Divine Principle

There are five most important lessons in Divine Principle that you must know.

The first is Give and Take Action. The second is Human Responsibility. The third is Restoration through Indemnity. The fourth is the Model Course. The fifth and last is The History of Restoration From the Viewpoint of the Parallel Providential Periods.

The first, Give and Take Action, is easy. Simply put, it is the give and take action between the subject partner and the object partner.

The second is Human Responsibility. Christian people believe God will do everything for them, and so they depend on God. But there are things that even God cannot do for us. This is our human responsibility. This is the part which we must do.

The third is Restoration through Indemnity. When we commit sin, we must be saved from the sin after paying indemnity. Christians believe that people who believe in Jesus will go to heaven and those who don't believe will not. Those who believe in Jesus, however, must practice his teachings, and such practice must yield results. This is what is different. Christianity has been teaching people incorrectly.

The fourth is the Model Course. This appears in the Principle of Restoration. We can find the first and the second Model Course in Part 1. The third, fourth and fifth model courses can be found in Part 2. So what is a Model Course? Satan, who refused to submit even to God, was not going to submit to our savior, the Messiah. So God found central figures such as Noah, Abraham, and Moses to demonstrate the model course for subjugating Satan. This is a Model Course.

Jacob's course was the symbolic course, Moses' course was the image course and Jesus' course was the substantial course. A symbolic course is a course that exists at a distance so far away it can barely be seen. An image course is a course that is closer and more easily distinguishable. For example, a symbol of Korea is its flag, the Tae Geuk flag, and an image of Korea would be a map of Korea.

The central figures in the Restoration Providence did not do the things they did because they wanted to. God was behind their unconscious actions and He did it in order to fulfill the Restoration Providence. Examples of this can be found in Noah lying naked in the tent and Abraham sending his wife Sarah to the Pharaoh.

God writes the play and human beings act it out. The reason is because God and human beings have to fulfill the Restoration Providence together.

These were the Model Courses which showed the path which Jesus had to travel. This is why it is written in John 5:19, "The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise."

The fifth is the Parallel Providential Periods. The periods differ from each other in scope and magnitude. When we look at the course of human history, though, we can discover that many similar events were repeated. Historians view this phenomena and call this the progression of human history in a spiral form.

Dual nature of God

Now let's talk about God. Father researched about God more than anyone else in the world. So he knows a lot about God. After much research, Father realized that God has dual characteristics that are seemingly opposite to each other. In other words, God exists in a context of correlativity, and He exists as the God of numbers.

I will explain about the correlativity of God first. Correlativity means there is a subject partner and an object partner. The subject partner invests and gives. The object partner receives from the subject partner and then gives back. Father, though, said that when the object partner gives back, it does not give back the same amount it received. It gives back with interest. Just as with a bank savings account, we earn more interest when we invest more.

An object partner that only receives and does not give back cannot continue to exist. It causes its own demise. When we look at it from the point of view of the principle of give and take action, we earn more interest if we give more. Father said that God never makes a deal where He loses.

God is at the center of the cosmos. Humans are the center of the Earth. God is also the parent. Humans are His children. You probably have your own children. How do you feel about them? Our children can be loved unconditionally. We want to give them everything and we spare no cost. This is the love instinct parents have toward their children.

Where does all that love come from? It comes from God. God gives everything to humans, because God is the parent. He does not ask questions when He gives. God's children are supposed to receive all that God gives them and then return goodness to God with interest. What will happen when such good children become good sons and daughters, become patriots in their nations, and become great people? The children's parents will look at them and think that all they had invested was worth it.

That is the profit the parents make from investing in their children. Parents do not ask for material interest in return for their love. This is because the sincere heart of the parents will generate interest automatically in correspondence to the amount of love that was invested.

Why do we call God our parent? Why does God have the *shimjeong* of a parent? When God created human beings, He did not think about Himself. He only thought about how much He could give to His children. God only has the *shimjeong* of a parent. The

shimjeong between brothers or spouses cannot reach that level. That is why we can call God our parent. This is the Principle of the love of give and take action.

Humans, too, want their children to become better people than themselves. One of the amazing teachings of Father is that since God is the parent and we are His children, God also wants us to become even better than Him. We had never heard such a concept before.

When I used to attend a Christian church, I was taught that God exists far above us. We humans are sinners and we go to heaven by believing in Jesus. We call ourselves sinners even if we are saved. The distance between God and humans always remains far apart. When I joined the Unification Church I heard the Principle of Creation and Father's words. I realized that God remained in the same place but I was lifted up. We are elevated to the level of God when we become His children. That was the difference.

God is our parent; thus He does not become jealous because we human beings become better than Him. It's the same with human parents. We are joyous when our children become better than us. Father felt, "Ah, yes! God as our parent wants us humans to

22

become even better than Him! Why so? It is because we humans are His children and we are the object partner of God's love." You cannot hear anything like this anywhere else in the world.

Father once said, "God grows together with humans!" What kind of amazing thought is this? I could not understand how a perfect being such as God grows together with humans. So I asked Father, "Does God really grow like a child? Christians will think we are crazy when they hear this. They keep persecuting us, because we say different things, but now you say that God grows?" Then Father said, "God of course is perfect, but love cannot be felt unless there is a partner. You will know this if you have children. If your child is five years old, you have to play with your child as if you are a five-year-old as well."

I was dumfounded when Father told me this. Then Father said, "Love is invisible, right? So, if there is no external stimulation coming from another being, it's as if love is not there." In those days, Father told us that our minds are inside of our bodies. People say, though, that they don't know their mind, even though it is inside of their body. They say God does not exist, even though God exists everywhere.

God appears at a place where there is stimulus. Father once told us once, "Hit your leg as hard as possible with your hand. It must hurt. This is the evidence that your mind

exists everywhere inside your body.” Our body is completely filled with our mind. When someone slaps our body, our mind works at the same time, and we automatically yell “ouch!” As our mind appears where there is external stimulus, God also appears where there is external stimulus.

We can see from the fact that we can feel love through stimulus from a partner that love is correlative. God’s love grows in relation to the growth of humans. This is why we can say that God grows, too. How about it? Can you understand? God and humans have such a very close relationship.

We are learning about the correlativity of God, the God of love at this moment. We are also learning about give and take action. Father once told us, “If you can clearly understand give and take action, you could say that you come close to knowing the Principle completely.”

He continued, “If we continue to live for the sake of others, even if you do not get anything in return right away, the interest will be compounded and come back to you as a great sum. I continue to give, because I know this. I give even when I wind up suffering a loss. Everything I have invested into this world will one day come back, and Unification Church members will become rich as a result of that. People will come, and money also will come. That is why I think I never suffer a loss.”

What is this “love?” It brings everything into natural subjugation. Why is that? An enemy is someone who has wronged us, right? So if we keep living for the sake of our enemy, the enemy’s heart will be moved and naturally be subjugated. It’s natural subjugation.

American Christianity has believed in the God of might, not the God of love. What is the God of might? Such a being tries to achieve His goal through violence. That’s forced subjugation. It is not natural subjugation.

Christians during the early founding stage of America persecuted the Indians who were living there peacefully. However, if the Christians had truly lived for the sake of the Indians and helped them with God’s love, the Indians would have listened to the Christians’ words. They would have said, “Ah, the God that you believe is truly a good being. We want to believe in Him, too.” The Christians in America, though, failed to relate to the Indians in this way. Father taught us through the Principle about the God of love and the way to naturally subjugate our enemies by living for the sake of others while sacrificing everything.

Then what is the “God of numbers?” The Principle introduces to us the numbers 12, 4, 21 and 40. We can find the providence of numbers during the growth period of Adam

and Eve. This providence of numbers reappeared in the Restoration Providence, since Adam and

23

Eve failed to achieve perfection. This is because the Providence of Restoration is the Providence of Re-Creation. The providence that involves numbers does not change. Twelve cannot become 13 and 4 cannot become 5. It cannot be changed easily. Its order is fixed. In the end, the God of numbers means the God of order.

Then what kind of God is the God of order? He is the God of science. All religious people, including Christians, think that God does not have anything to do with science, since He can work great miracles and perform infinitely great spiritual wonders. This cannot be further from the truth.

God is the origin of science. Imagine what would have happened if God had created everything in the universe including the sun, the moon and the solar system while ignoring orderliness (science). Everything would collide with each other and be destroyed. The celestial bodies, though, run on certain orbits. The origin of science as such is none other than God.

Father discovered both the God of love and the God of science, and wondered which God he should research more. Father already knew a lot about the God of love spiritually and he was in fact practicing a lot of love and service for others. That is why he decided to learn more about the God of science.

Electricity can only exist through the give and take action between positivity (+) and negativity (-). There are many fields in science, but Father chose to learn about electricity, since examples using electricity work well when explaining the Principle and the love of God.

Our Principle contains everything from the God of love to the God of science, from natural science to the Bible, theology, philosophy, and literature. The Principle truly is the most fundamental truth which can explain everything. Then, what do you think will happen if people learn about the Principle? People will be captivated by it.

24

¡°Spread the great New Truth discovered by Father to the whole world¡±

Let us take a look at page 5 of the 3-hour Hoon Dok Chart. The resolution of internal ignorance through internal truth is accomplished through religion, and the resolution of

external ignorance through external truth is accomplished through science. This is the New Truth. This is our great Principle through which Father reveals and explains the unexplained portions of the Bible.

Page 2 of the Divine Principle Hoondok Chart deals with human contradiction and the Fall. It also uses the term ‘ Selfish Motive.’

When I was young, I asked many questions to Father, because I attended Father very closely, often eating and studying together with him. Those times have become extremely helpful to me. It was around 1955 or 1956, before Father’s Holy Marriage with Mother, so he wasn’t as difficult to approach as he was later. He treated us warmly, just like an older brother.

I asked Father about this "Selfish Motive." I asked him, “You are a human being just like the rest of us, right?” “Yes,” he said. “Then how were you able to find the Principle which couldn’t be found by a normal human being, and claim that you will save all of humanity?” He answered, “Because I threw away my selfish motivation.”

As explained before, people are in anguish because of selfish motivation. Our Original Mind leads us to do good things, but our self-centeredness tries to lead us to do evil things. This is why many religious people and others in philosophy or other fields in the past have tried to get rid of their self-centeredness. Humanity, though, has not been able to overcome self-centeredness.

You can’t help but receive blessings if you get rid of this selfish motivation. If you receive the Blessing, your Selfish Motive will be removed. Why is this so?

The human ancestors Adam and Eve could not share love centering on God. They loved centering on Satan. That is why they received the lineage of Satan. Instead of realizing joy, the love of Adam and Eve became the origin of contradiction. The root of life is embedded in this origin of human conflict. (*True Families and I*, p 2)

We receive the Blessing so that we can love centering on God. Then, living the life of sacrificing everything we have, including our lives, and living for the sake of others leads to overcoming self-centeredness. That is the reason everyone in the world must receive the Holy Blessing.

We have received the Holy Blessing and our lineages have been changed to God’s lineage. Those who were born to parents who have not received the Holy Blessing, meanwhile, still have Satan’s lineage. When does lineage begin? It becomes lineage as soon as the man’s sperm enters the woman’s body and fertilizes the egg inside the womb.

Since we must receive the Holy Blessing to sever Satan's lineage and have God's lineage, Father often said, "I must Bless everyone in the physical world and spirit world before I go to the spirit world so I can change everyone's lineage to that of God's, completely eliminate Satan's lineage and create the everlasting eternal Kingdom of God. This is my responsibility."

We learn the Principle and his Words today, but when I was very young, around 50 years ago – it was such a long time ago – there weren't that many members. There were 2 or 3 people, maybe 5, 6, or 10 at the most. Father spoke day and night in the living room of the Old Headquarters Church with such a small number of people. His words then were very entertaining and the listeners were filled with grace.

25

It felt like the times when my grandmother used to feed me raw chestnuts after chewing them to make them soft for me. I enjoyed eating those delicious chestnuts without ever thinking it was a problem. It was just like that. Father was worried. Why? Because the Principle is difficult. Father worried: "Will these people understand the Principle?" That is why he tried to chew the Principle as if chewing raw chestnuts before feeding us.

There weren't that many people there, so I kept asking him about things I didn't understand. Father never grew tired of my questions and answered me diligently. That is why when people hear my lecture, they think, "Hey, I felt the Principle was difficult but her lecture is very easy to understand." People also tell me, "I felt a barrier with Father, but now it feels like Father is right next to me. I feel your loving heart for Father."

Please don't think that you are listening to only one person as you are listening to my words. Please think, "Father is with me!" One of the missions Father gave me was this: "You listened to Father's Words a lot since you were young, right? So, visit all corners of the Earth and spread the Word until you go to the spirit world." Then I said, "What?" Then he said, "You have got nothing else to do!" I've accepted the mission given to me and I have been traveling around the world, giving speeches as the president of the Tongil Party. Father also told me to continue on to Africa to spread his words.

I have listened to Father's words so much and they are now the debt of love that I owe him. Father is telling me now to repay that debt. He said, "How many words did I give you night and day in the early days? I still want to speak to everyone in the whole world. However, I am too busy to do that."

Father became so busy, teaching the top-level world leaders around the world. He became so busy that he did not even have the time to say hello to us. That is why he would say, “You Thirty-six couple members, the so-called senior members, go and teach the younger members as I have taught you.” That is why I am here today.

26

Father’s effort to unify religion and science

Father has done many things to unify religion and science. Religions have been performing spiritual works only abstractly, but Father has been explaining with practical theories that are scientific and logical. The Principle is good evidence of this. The Christians who still harbor abstract bias against our church still oppose us, but this Principle overcame the entire Communist world.

One of the first outreach organizations that Father created was Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA). Father established PWPA on May 6, 1973 after hosting the first International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences in New York City from November 23 to 26, 1972.

Father told us that when he visited hell in the spirit world, he found many prominent scholars known throughout the world in the darkest place. When Father asked them, “Why are you here?,” they answered, “We have committed the sin of leading people away from God by writing books with our self-centered thoughts while being ignorant about the existence of God. Because of our writings, many people come to hell without knowing about God and our sins grow day by day. That is why we cannot be liberated from hell.”

He said that the scholars were also sitting with their backs facing each other in a very lonely fashion and were suffering. When Father asked them, “Why are you sitting with your backs facing each other?” they answered, “It is because we have committed the sin of not accepting others’ knowledge, while insisting that only our own knowledge is correct.”

Father told us the most important reason he established PWPA was to educate scholars about God to help him succeed in liberating hell.

Father went on to say that the books that contain the truth about God will remain untouched, while angry mobs of people would throw away and burn the books that do not introduce God.

The purpose of the establishment of PWPA can be found on page 281 of volume 5 of *True Parents' Life Course*.

“I believe every professor in the world must work in their own field and write to provide people with direction. I must start a new organization centering on universities, and that is why I have established Professors World Peace Academy.”

27

The providential meaning for Father's imprisonment in Heungnam

Father tells us that when we compare communism and democracy, democracy persecuted Father more than communism. Democracy did one good thing, though. This was that democracy didn't kill the Messiah. He says that if Father had stayed in North Korea much longer than he did, the North Korean government would have surely murdered Father.

God must have been in a great hurry. That is why God started the Korean War and had the United Nations and the United States drop bombs on North Korea. Do you know why the Korean War began? It was because of Father.

There is a famous story regarding an old woman, Mrs. Se Hyeon Ok, who is now in the spirit world. Mrs. Ok served Father beginning when he was in Pyongyang and the Christians around her ridiculed her.

There is a passage in the Bible about Peter being liberated from jail by angels. The angels blinded the jailer's eyes to let Peter escape from the prison. Christians cited this and mocked her, saying, “If your Rev. Moon is the returning Lord, how come he can't break out of prison?” Grandmother Ok was deeply hurt by this. She cried so much and prayed, “Heavenly Father! Please bring our teacher out from prison.”

God immediately appeared and yelled at her, saying, “Hey, don't pray for things I can't make come true!” God told her, “Who would protect his life if he were in Pyongyang? I put your teacher in the prison so I can protect his life. He is safer inside the prison than he would be if he were outside. If he were not in a prison, Christians and communists would kill him!”

Who killed Jesus? It was the Romans and Jewish people who opposed him. Father was in the same position. If the Christians kept claiming, “Rev. Moon is bad, Rev. Moon is bad”, and framed him as a spy sent by the South Korean government, the North Korean communists would surely kill him. God could see no other way, and had to send Father to prison. Then God started the Korean War in order to save Father.

When we think about it, the history of Korea as we know it exists because of Father. We know this but the world does not.

28

Chapter 2

Principle of Creation God exists without form

When we read the Principle of Creation, there is a sentence that says, “How can we know the divine nature of the invisible God?” Father told us that, during his research about God, he thought a lot about why God does is invisible.

Apparently, we can't see God's form even after we go to the spirit world. Why is that? Father gave us two reasons. The first chapter in the Cheon Seong Gyeong deals with "True God" and many points regarding this are dealt with in detail.

First, God would find himself in a very difficult position if he had a form, because people would try to take God for themselves. Everyone in the world would say “God! Come to me.” “No! God is mine!” and they would fight each other to own God. Wars even more devastating than the two world wars in the twentieth century would continue to happen. This is the reason it is better for us to not be able to see God. Humans and all creation are created by God as a manifestation of His form. Therefore, there is nowhere God does not exist. But if we were able to see God, it would be terrible.

The second reason is that if God had a body we could see, like our own, the size would become a problem. How large would God's body have to be, when there are creations such as lofty mountains and deep oceans?

There were old ladies who had bright spiritual senses in Daegu. They are now all in the spirit world, but the testimonies they gave during their lives were quite fun to hear.

When they asked in their Daegu dialect, “God! You have a human voice, but how come we can't see you?” God would answer in their own dialect, “I got no body!” If they nagged God, saying, “No way, It can't be! Show me!” God would show them a great tsunami and tell them, “This is me!” If they said, “No. No. I hate water like that!” then strong stormy winds began to blow. Then they said, “No! I hate wind too!”

What God told them was actually correct. Wind and water are part of God's image. When the old ladies kept nagging God, saying, “Show yourself in a human form!” God would appear in front of them as a father with a warm smile. It is because if Adam and Eve had been perfected, they would have become the body of God, and God would have appear in the form of Adam and Eve.

If God appeared as a great mountain, the people below would not be able to have a good night's sleep because they would have to run away from God to save their lives. This is why God determined that "I should have no form at all. If I appear, my beloved children will cry out that they are all going to be squashed to death. There won't be a day that goes by without someone crying out about it. I must not have any form."

Father told us, "Don't try to see God. That's what will happen to you if you try to see God, so don't try that anymore." It was revealed later that Father also thought, "I'm grateful that God does not have a form."

29

God's dual characteristics

To help your understanding about God's dual characteristics, I am going to show you part of the diary written by Hyo Won Eu when he was editing *Explanation of Divine Principle* and *Exposition of Divine Principle* based on the *Wolli Wonbon* under Father's supervision.

Monday, January 31, 1966

I asked him whether Sungsang and Hyungsang are formed by the harmonization of Yin and Yang.

Teacher's answer was the opposite.

He said the harmonization of Sungsang and Hyungsang creates Yin and Yang. My world was turned upside down.

He overturned the traditional theory that everything comes into existence through the harmony of Yin and Yang.

He explained that it is true in the world of cause and effect but not so with God. If God already had Yin and Yang in Him, there would have been no creation.

He then explained that God exists as the harmony of Sungsang and Hyungsang and is the Yang type of existence. Therefore, God had to create the Yin type of world.

I asked Teacher if I could write that all things were created with Yin and Yang and Sungsang and Hyungsang because God has Original Sungsang and Original Hyungsang which have the relationship of man and woman. Teacher said yes and I realized his intention.

Thursday, February 3, 1966

I had to re-write the first part of the Principle of Creation.

The argument is that Sungsang and Hyungsang are the most fundamental essence of all existence. I realized again that Teacher truly is the Original Body of the Truth.

30

Father thoroughly applied the principle of give and take action

The most important aspects of the Principle of Creation are Give and Take Action and Human Responsibility.

After researching about the principle by which God created the universe, Father discovered that everything is in reciprocal relationships and that this was the principle of give and take action between subject and object partners.

For everything you give, you will receive. If a subject partner gives something to its object partner but the object partner does not return anything, that object will be destroyed. In this sense, True Love is something that is given infinitely. In other words, you invest and invest without looking back. You do not keep an account of what you give. I truly felt that Father was a person of such kind of love after serving him so closely for so long.

How could Father have done that?

In the late 1980s, Father asked church-related businesses invest some \$300 million dollars in China to create the Panda Automobile Company. The reason behind this was that God's providence could be fulfilled if China, the Archangel nation, helped Korea, the Adam nation, and Japan, the Eve nation.

Ultimately, the \$300 million dollars was invested in a way that returned very little profit to us but was very advantageous to China.

Then the Tiananmen Square incident happened in 1989. Students and young people during the time of Deng Xiaoping rallied for freedom and democracy. They formed a large protest group demonstrating in Tiananmen Square against the Communist government. The Chinese government was extremely surprised. The government ordered tanks to fire upon the protesters and this resulted in thousands of deaths in Tiananmen Square and all over the city. It was a gruesome incident.

Many foreign investors at that time felt that there was no hope to invest in this country, and took the money they had safely kept in Hong Kong and went back to their own

countries. At that time, Bo Hi Pak phoned Father and asked, “What should our people do? Should they withdraw the money in the Hong Kong Bank and return to Korea?” Father told him, “You sit tight. Don’ t you think I foresaw this type of event when I sent you? If the money is withdrawn, China will fall. Leave it there, and just wait! The time will come soon, so wait!”

Those who left China with their money were still observing China from their own country. When they saw that Rev. Moon did not guide his followers to leave with their money, people thought there still may be some hope. They came back to China and deposited their money back into the Hong Kong Bank. China was saved. That is why China’s economy at the time was not destroyed.

As a result, the Chinese government began to trust Father. At the time, it was very difficult to cross the 38th Parallel between North and South Korea. But the Chinese government gave permission for the professors and students of Kim Il Sung University to freely engage in various activities with our organizations. Thus, the Providence advanced rapidly.

Do you know who was most shocked by Father’s success? Of course, the free world was impressed, but Mikhail Gorbachev and Kim Il Sung were even more surprised. Three hundred thousand Chinese soldiers went half way down the Korean peninsula during the Korean War during the 1950s. They thought, “How could Rev. Moon help his enemy like that? Rev. Moon must be the kind of person who transcends ideology, race, and religion, and

31

will help anyone in order to realize world peace.”

I was in East Garden when I saw Bo Hi Pak present Father with a white ceramic

gratitude plaque sent from the Chinese government. It carried an inscription in bold red letters that said, “Leader of World Peace, Reverend Sun Myung Moon.” Father was so happy to receive it and said, “Yes! China will now listen to my words.”

Mother was able to proclaim the Word of God in Beijing’s Great Hall of the People thanks to Father’s helping the Chinese economy. Mother’s speech originally could not be held there, because it had been reserved for many meetings of the Wives’ Associations at the end of the year. When Deng Pufang, the oldest son of Deng Xiaoping heard of this, he shouted, “This is the wife of Rev. Moon, who saved China from an economic crisis. We must have her here even if it means we have to cancel your schedule.” This is how Mother was able to hold the rally in the Great Hall of the People.

This was the reason Won Bok Choi and the leaders of Women's Federation could go to China with Mother just before Christmas, 1992, and hold the Rally to Declare Father's Words. At the time, China was a very poor place without even sufficient electricity. A female government minister came to welcome us, and she appeared in a plain sweater and a pair of pants. However, they made a great effort to treat Mother the best they could, such as laying out an old carpet for her to walk on.

We were relieved when we saw a large welcoming party lined up at the airport.

The oldest son of Deng Xiaoping invited us for lunch the next day. He invited Mother to the guest house-(Diaoyutai State Guesthouse), where the most important national guests were hosted. There, he told her, "Welcome, madam. I respect your husband, Rev. Sun Myung Moon. I realized that he does not hold any enemies in order to realize world peace. That is why I am reading Rev. Moon's words every day in order to lead my life according to his teachings."

Mother was moved tremendously and told him, with tears in her eyes, "Thank you. There are still many people who oppose and misunderstand us, and I am so grateful that you understand the works of my husband." Looking at them warmly exchanging kind words as if a mother and her son had met after a long separation, I realized how great was the effect of Father's love expressed by his investment in the Panda Automobile Company. This is how the 1.3 billion people of China were able to listen to Mother's Hoon Dok Words through China's national broadcast.

As Father often told us, give and take action means that if you give infinitely it will return to you with great compounded interest. Tongil Industry invested a lot of technology in the Panda Automobile Company and we members, including our Japanese members, made a lot of investment with our donations.

Father gained greater results than just making profit through businesses. That is the nature of God's True Love. God's *shimjeong* which leads Him to invest more and more even after already investing 100 percent is based on this. Father realized such a great principle.

Father said that anything he invests justly for God's Will always becomes hundreds and thousands of times larger and comes back to him. That this is why he continued to invest.

God created humans and all things. God created in two parts: the spiritual body and the physical body. That is why humans now have the spirit self, which is like God's spirituality.

Humans can have dominion over the all things created by God, because God made human's physical body with dirt. Humans can have relationship with all things, because they have the physical body. God cannot interact with all things directly. This is the importance of physical body.

Also, God blew His spirit into that physical body. This spirit is to grow and become complete before it can have dominion over the spirit world. Humans have a physical self and spiritual self in order to have dominion, on God's behalf, and as God's children, over the worlds both visible and invisible.

Secondly, God made humans as his object partner. As we are unaware of the existence of our mind unless it receives stimulation, God created the substantial body which can be seen. Since He cannot feel love alone, He wanted to dwell in that body. Didn't we learn that God was to dwell in Adam and Eve once they were perfected? Then Adam and Eve would live while attending God. Adam and Eve would be God's home. God created Adam and Eve, because He needed bodies. God had no choice but to create.

Next is Three Object Purpose. Father one day told us "Three Object Purpose, it's difficult to understand, right? In terms of love, this is like the unity of love."

For example, the grandfather in a family is in the position of God. Then, in the position of the unity of love, there is his grandchild. If his grandchild one day asks his grandfather, "Grandpa, give me a piggy back ride!" then regardless of how high, God-like of position the grandfather is in, he will still say "Yes, of course!" and give his grandchild a piggy back ride. In that moment, the grandfather yields to his grandchild's request. Here, the grandchild becomes the subject partner and the grandfather becomes the object partner.

When we look at the relationship between husband and wife, the wife's original position is that of the object partner and husband's position is that of the subject partner. However, when the wife asks her husband, "Honey, I have muscle cramps in my back. Please give me a massage!", then the husband will surely give a massage to his lovely wife, correct? At this moment, because the wife moved her husband according to her will, because the husband did what his wife had asked him to do, the wife goes to the position of subject partner and the husband the object partner.

When the husband goes somewhere, the wife follows him unconditionally. She does not even ask a question but follows her husband like a magnet. Then their children will

go the same direction because their parents are going there. Then who will follow them? God will follow them joyfully. When we practice Absolute Faith, Absolute Love, and Absolute Obedience, we, who are in the object partner's position, will go to the subject partner's position and God will follow us.

The four positions in the Four Position Foundation are equal in value, no one position higher than the others. They are equally same. They are united. In other words, they become one in body. This is how when God is in the subject position, the other three positions become three object partners. There are God, Subject Partner, Object Partner, and the union in Four Position Foundation, and when the object partner becomes the subject partner, then other three will become its object partners. When the union becomes the subject partner, then other three, including God, will also become object partners. Three

33

Object means that there is one subject partner and three object partner. This realization of Three Object Purpose in Four Position Foundation is unity through love.

When the husband and the wife are completely united, they don't have a reason to fight. Also, as God appears through Four Position Foundation, it becomes very lonely if even one of these positions is absent. It is because God's love realize the unity by fulfilling the Three Object Purpose through Four Position Foundation.

34

Father loved God more than anyone

Father told us that there were three questions God would ask each of us when we go to the spirit world. These questions are asked to everyone without exception.

First, how much did you love God while you were in the physical world? Second, how much did you love people? Third, how much did you love creation? He told us that God always asks these questions. This is why Father has been telling us to love God, love human beings, and love creation while we are in the physical world.

I saw how Father loved God. I am unable to know about all the love Father gave to God, but I want to tell you some of the things that I witnessed while attending him closely.

Father sometimes said, "I am crazy about God. I am crazy about the Principle. There is nothing I do that deviates from the desires of God and the Principle." What does it

mean to be crazy? It means that a person has no awareness of himself. Father was someone who always asked, “What is God’s Will? What does God want?” Such a desire only got stronger as time passed.

When Father would sit quietly, it seemed like Father had nothing. He seemed to be in a state devoid of thought. He sometimes hummed quietly and looked like he was waiting for someone. I sometimes saw Father trying to catch the frequency of God’s Will like a rotating antenna, always keeping himself empty. Then, when he would start something. He would move with great speed, like lightning.

American members have asked me:

“What kind of person was Father. How can you describe him in just one word?” This is a truly difficult question to answer. I answered it this way: “He had nothing,

and he had everything.” I don’t think I can give a better answer than that.

Also, Father was like the bridge that allowed people to cross the river to escape

from Satan and come to God. A bridge connects two sides of a river. However, should there be an obstacle in the middle of the bridge, that obstacle will hinder people and cars from crossing. Therefore, bridges must be kept clean and free of obstacles. Father was like that.

Father was also like a tunnel that lets people pass through a mountain with great ease. Cars can swiftly drive through a tunnel only when the tunnel is clear of obstacles.

So Father has the role of a mediator, like a bridge or a tunnel, who connects one side (human beings) to the other (God). Meanwhile, he keeps no trace of himself in his own consciousness.

Father often said a person must become more humble as his position rises and he takes on more responsibility. He must be like a fetus in the womb. A fetus in its mother’s womb does not have freedom. A fetus receives nutrients through the umbilical cord connected to the mother. If the mother lies down, the baby lies down, too. When she gets up, the baby must get up too, and follow the mother wherever she goes. The fetus does not have any freedom.

Big and small positions that we find ourselves in do not belong to us. Instead of being ours, they belong to True Parents. This is why you must stand in the position of defending what belongs to True Parents. You will become the pastor, and regional and national leaders in the future. You could also become a leader in a providential organization. In other words, as we rise in the organization, our positions do not belong to us. Heaven has given us the positions, so that we may take good care of it. You must

know that it is not your position. Leaders also have to pray continuously, do Hoon Dok Hae, become role models for others, and live for the sake of the members. If you can stick to these rules, you will do well

35

no matter what position you are entrusted with.

Then, your heart will be empty, and you will always ask God, “Father, you have put

me in this position. What do you want me to do? What shall I do?” We must have that kind of mind set. It is important that leaders have that kind of mind set. Then God will always shower us with inspiration and wisdom.

Father once told me, “You must be a happy person.” So I asked him, “Why, Father?” Then he answered, “You can control your own schedule when you go on a speaking tour. You have that freedom. I don’t.” We may think that Father is the freest person of all, but Father actually has no freedom. He does not have freedom, because he always seeks the Will of God and strives to become one with the Will.

Father is very sensitive to all aspects of the environment, from the weather to the direction of the wind. Father once said, “I am in a state of complete unity of mind and body.” Father said this state means there is no concept of separation between mind and body. God’s feelings are within him, because his mind is one with God and he acts according to his mind without a second thought. When we cannot make up our mind about something, it is evidence of our disunity between mind and body.

That is why Father thinks things that happen to his body are very important. For example, there was an instance time when he remained in his bed until it was almost time for him to leave for an appointment. Those of us attending him became anxious. We told him, “Father, it’s almost time to go.” Then Father said, “I know that, but don’t go. My legs don’t want to go. I think I should go later.”

A few times, Father would have appointments around 10 o’ clock in the morning and he rose from his bed very early and left the house around 5 or 6 o’ clock. in the morning. When we asked him why he was leaving so early, he told us that there were people who were trying to harm him if he went there on time. He knew about such schemes through his spiritual senses. Sometimes he would not leave the house until much later, even though he had an appointment at ten. He would say he had to go late in order to avoid plots to harm him.

Father always told us that no matter how sincerely we serve Father, nothing we did could help him extend his life. Father always said he protected his own life through his spiritual senses.

I dream quite often, and one day I had this one dream. There was a building with gigantic pillars, and we were at one end of the building with Father. At the other end were countless enemies, and they were shooting arrows and throwing spears at Father. We were scared and we screamed. Even though we were very close to Father, we were only trembling in fear instead of helping Father. Father moved quickly so as to dodge all the projectiles raining down on him. After this dream, I realized, "If we are just following Father without being of any help to him, we are only becoming a burden to Father!"

One time in a dream, I was following Father and he suddenly disappeared. He just disappeared into thin air. I started looking for Father as if playing hide-and-seek, thinking "Oh, where did Teacher go?" In my quest to find him, sometimes mountains blocked my path and sometimes there were rivers I had to cross. I summoned all my strength to overcome these obstacles. It was very difficult and tiring to overcome these mountains and rivers, even though it was just a dream. Just when I was about to fall down exhausted, I saw that there was a small hut on the side of a valley in the distance. I felt sure Teacher was there. When I arrived at the hut, there was space enough only for one person to lie down, and Father was there alone.

In those days, Father was receiving a lot of persecution from Satan. I also had a dream where Father was running away desperately in order to save his life.

Former Amb. Sang Guk Han has a son named Cheori. He opened his spiritual eyes when he was only four and he read people's minds accurately. Ambassador Han asked Father,

36

"Should everyone open their spiritual eyes like my Choeri?" Father answered, "No. If human beings had not fallen, they would not have known that there is such a thing as a spirit body." He meant that the physical body and the spiritual body would be united so completely that they would not even be able to distinguish between the two.

If human beings had not fallen, God's Will would have been known directly by our spirit bodies, and we would act according to God's Spiritual phenomena can be compared to trying to fix a broken machine by punching it. Father told us that such things are phenomena seen in the path of restoration to God.

When we consider these things, we can understand that Father is someone who is always ready to follow God's Will at any time. In other words, Father is like this, because he is in a state of complete absence of self.

37

People are object partners of love and teachers of love

The next question God will ask us is how much we loved other people while we were in the physical world.

Father taught us there are two ideal ways to interact with people.

The first way, he said, is to treat anyone, be they children or the elderly, as people sent by God. He would look at people and say: "I will do the best I can for these people. How will I make them happy and joyful?" He would keep thinking about how he would do this. Eventually he would find a way to be good to them.

We say God is all-powerful and all-knowing, that He knows everything and can do everything. But such a concept can only be explained through love. God is such a being.

It is similar to the way we humans seek the best ways to make our children happy. If we think about it hard enough, the way to do this will come to our mind naturally. Father naturally figured out the best way to make people happy, and it came to him after some thinking. Then he gained the ability to make it happen as well. If we also want to become all-powerful and all-knowing, we need to become the owners of such true love.

Father said the second way is to think that there must be something he can learn from each person. Father would treat each person with humility, thinking that he must learn something from that person. He would consider that God must have sent this person to Father to teach Father something. When he thought way with great sincerity, there was always something that he could learn. Father said it was because every human being is born with one of the twelve character-types of God.

Father told us he feels immense joy when he serves a person as his teacher. He said he could live every day and every moment like the first day of school, excited to learn new things and without any sense of boredom. For us as well, a person who has a heart to learn from others, and to do good things for others, is the happiest person alive.

The richest people are those who strive to live for the sake of others, and the poorest are those who may have a lot of wealth but still try to devise plans to use people. Father said that such a person, although he may have mountains of material goods, he will never feel satisfied because of his greed.

So we need to think seriously about how we will love people and live for the sake of others. We must learn that Father treated each and every person preciously.

38

The level of Father's love for nature

The third question God will ask us when we go to spirit world is how much we loved while we were in the physical world. To learn the answer to this question, I closely watched how Father loves all created things.

First of all, Father carefully organized everything that he used. He kept his room so tidy that one night when the electricity went out for three hours, he had no problems moving around and finding everything he needed in the dark. It was because he knew where everything was, since he kept everything in its proper place. He could still find any item and later return it to its place. That's how organized he was.

The True Child who most resembles this aspect of Father is Un Jin Nim. Father used to peek into his children's rooms in the daytime or at night since he was so busy and did not have much time to spend with his children. Un Jin Nim used to make her bed very neatly and sleep on the floor. When Father asked, "Un Jin! Why do you sleep on the floor and not on the bed?" Un Jin Nim would answer, "I can't sleep on the bed. It's clean, and it will wrinkle if I sleep on it." Listening to this, Father said, "You take after me!"

Father is very organized, and he also conserves things very much. One time, a delicious looking melon was cut into eight crescent-shaped slices and cut so that people could use forks to eat it. After eating the last piece, Father took a spoon and started gouging the white part attached to the skin just like a typical old man in a rural farming village. Watching this, Mother asked Father, "Father! Do you want another?" He replied, "I'm only doing this, because I don't want to waste the uneaten part by throwing it away."

Mother once bought a new crystal drinking glass for Father at a department store. Father was very sad, though, and asked where his old drinking glass had gone. He asked why she had to buy a new glass, when the old one was still in good condition. He said he had many beautiful memories with old glass, and he enjoyed thinking of these while he drank from it. The glass had many memories attached to it, such as the times

he thought about God's Will and when he yearned for certain persons. All the layers of memory would disappear if the glass was thrown away.

He also would wear the same sweater for a long time. He would say he had many good memories attached to a particular sweater. When he received a new sweater or necktie, he would wear it once, on a special occasion such as Christmas, and then gives it away. Father would then go back to wearing the same piece of clothing he had been wearing. He would sometimes talk to the clothes, or thinks about a particular person or about God's Will while wearing a particular piece of clothing. Everything around Father was alive. Any article might become a conversation partner for Father.

Father would treat each article as if it was part of his own body. For example, whenever he would travel by commercial plane, he would clean the toilet in the passenger cabin very thoroughly. He would say it made the aircraft happy for him to dance. He would feel these things with his mind and body. The aircraft would tell him where bad people were sitting. When he would go to someone's private home, he could know the atmosphere of the house by looking at the ceiling or the curtains and understand the personality of the owner of the house. It was because all things responded to him. Father could know these things also by looking at the pet cats or dogs in a home. If the owner was a short tempered, the dog's bark would reflect this. If the owner was easy-going, the pet would resemble this character trait.

Father talks to nature like this. Father said that truly loving all things in the world

39

and making them our friends lets us experience what it would have been live for Adam and Eve, had they achieved dominion over all creation.

One day, Father went with others church members to the house of a member who raised quails. This person was famous for raising many quails. Father looked at the cage where hundreds of quails were being kept. Then he asked me while quietly observing the cage, "Gil Ja, when do you think quails are the happiest?" I said, "Well, it must be when a male and a female quail make love." Father told me, though, "No. Since all things are created by God for human beings, they are the happiest when they see humans look at them with love in their hearts."

So it is important for you to love all things before you go to the spirit world. Father also told us to conserve all things.

Once, Father was training second generation blessed children to catch tuna. He noticed that they took long sheets of toilet paper with them when going to the toilet. Father told

them that if they waste toilet paper like this, their descendants would be beggars. This is how much Father conserved things. He would say all things become joyful and follow humans only when we practice conservation things. Let us keep this in mind and not waste things.

40

Father moves heavenly fortune by knowing the providential time

Here, we will talk about the Three Orderly Stages of the Growing Period.

I will explain with a diagram so you can understand this more easily. (See the picture on page 32 of the 3-hour Divine Principle Summarized Hoon Dok Charts.

Why does the Principle say Adam and Eve fell at the completion level of the growth stage? This is not something Father just made up. Just clue can be found in the Bible. It is the three sacrificial offerings of Abraham. Abraham's three offerings represented all things in the cosmos. (See the picture on page 138 of the 3-hour Divine Principle Summarized Hoon Dok Charts.

God told Abraham, "Offer me two doves and two sheep. However, offer me only one cow." Why did He do this? It was because Adam and Eve grew in a horizontal relationship during the formation and growth period, but they did not have the same horizontal relationship in the completion stage. That is why God told Abraham to offer only one cow, which symbolized the completion stage.

So the conclusion here is that Adam and Eve fell while they were in the completion level of the growth stage, and it was possible for Satan to invade up to this level. However, Satan could not invade the completion stage.

We can also know this by observing the way Father advanced the providence in reality. In 1967, Father said in Japan, "Communism will not be able to rise any further, once 70 years have passed after the Communist Revolution in Russia." He spoke again at a time when Communism had expanded its influence over the globe, saying "Communism will only go down. It will end." People said "Oh, we thought Rev. Moon was a smart man, but what is this? Is Rev. Moon mad? How could he say Communism will end when it's spreading like a wildfire?"

Each of the three stages of the Growing Period, Formation, Growth, and Completion, represent 33 percent of the whole. The portion up to the completion level of the growth stage, where Adam and Eve fell, would be 66.7 percent, which is approximately 70

percent. That is why Father said Communism would begin to decline 70 years after the Bolshevik Revolution.

Communism ended, just as Father predicted. Signs of its demise slowly began to appear 60 years after the Bolshevik Revolution. By the time 70 years had passed, it was clearly in decline. Even the top figures of Communism, Mikhail Gorbachev and Kim Il Sung, bowed their heads to Father. It was because the time had come. That is why Father said, “I am a human just like anyone else, but I can do things that you cannot.”

Judging from this, Father knows the correct time in the providence. That is why he can predict what kind of time will come and what kind of age will dawn. Nobody knows when this time will come. Only Father knows. Father predicts and he prepares accordingly.

Second, Father moves heavenly fortune. What does it mean to move heavenly fortune? In other words, he moves the spirit world according to his will. Who made the Cheongpyeong miracle happen? It was Father. Heung Jin Nim and Dae Mo Nim were able to move the ancestors and the whole spirit world upon the victorious foundation prepared by Father in the physical world. Father moves heavenly fortune in this way. In other words, he moves the spirit world.

Father once told us that moving spirit world can be compared to trying to control a storm. When faced with a storm, human beings cannot stop it. Father moves heavenly fortune by moving the spirit world, and no leader in the world can defeat Father, because

41

they are facing a storm.

You probably gave Holy Wine to many people. What do the people of the world

think about this? Most of them will say, “What are they doing?” Still, Father makes us do things that people outside our church don’t understand. It is because such actions can move the spirit world and bring heavenly fortune. Helping people drink the Holy Wine becomes a condition.

We are in the same position as we are in the spirit world, but outside people do not understand this. We also don’t know everything. So what is absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience? Even though we do not understand, if we follow Father’s direction, we will be a part of Father’s work and we will be following Father when he moves heavenly fortune. That is the reason things keep going well for Unification

Church members, while people outside the church keep experiencing that things that would normally be expected to go well somehow do not.

42

Growth and perfection the of spirit self

When we read Section 6, The Incorporeal World and the Corporeal World Whose Center is Human Beings of the Principle of Creation, it explains about the growth of the spirit self.

Our spirit self grows in three stages. Each stage of the growth of the spirit self has a name. The names are form spirit, life spirit and divine spirit. Here, divine spirit means luminescent spirit. The name of each stage of growth of the spirit self has its own meaning.

Before we received the Holy Blessing. while we were still attending university, Father would come to our campus. Father told us then, "If you marry a man in this world, you will give birth to a child whose spiritual self is half human and half animal." He told us half human and half animal beings actually exist in the spirit world. At the time, I didn't understand what he meant. I could only listened to his words with amazement. Recently, though, I am feeling the reality of those words.

I went to the British Museum when I visited London. At either side of the front entrance of the museum, there were statues of beings that were half animal and half human. Their upper bodies were human, but they had the lower body of a horse, with four legs and a tail.

Perhaps the sculpture intended to symbolize someone of great ability by giving the statues the lower body of a horse, since transportation was not as well developed then as it is today. In those days, horse back was the fastest and the most convenient way to travel. In reality, though, the sculpture created a statue resembling half animal and half human being in the spirit world.

Before a human's spirit takes form, it is at the level of an animal. Ok Soon Shin, a lady now in the spirit world whose spiritual eyes were open, told us that humans may walk on two feet with their physical body, but the spirit selves of those who have not gone through resurrection walk on all fours like animals. She told us that since we have accepted the Word and have been resurrected, our spirit selves have taken on proper form. She also said that most of those who have not gone through resurrection have an animal-like spirit self that crawls on the ground. Furthermore, people's spirit selves

take the form of dogs when their ancestors were sexually promiscuous, the form of a pig if they were greedy and the shape of snakes if they were liars.

What I realized while attending Father very closely was that Father was well aware of these facts. We used to listen to Father's Words during Sunday services held in the Old Headquarters Church at Cheongpa Dong. Father would come downstairs from the second floor at seven o'clock to have his breakfast. Then, we would listen to Father's words, sometimes through the day and into the night.

Sometimes, we would be sitting in a circle, listening to Father speak, and there would be someone Father would not talk to for the entire day. He would not even acknowledge his presence. There would be others with whom Father would exchange many words. He would select a few among the seated group to speak to. In other words, he was discriminating among people.

At first, I could not understand why Father would discriminate against certain people. It was only much later that Father told us, "The reason was that those who are not in a position where I can have direct dominion and give my love directly have spirit selves whose forms are not yet human." When I heard him say this, I could understand the reason for his earlier behavior.

43

For example, one person's spirit self would have an eye that was not in the proper position on the face, or a nose would be crooked, or a mouth located on the back of the head. There are people whose spirit self has an unimaginably fierce look. Father said that he should leave such people alone. If Father speaks to them or interferes with them, their eyes, mouth, or nose would never return to the proper position.

Father does not speak to such people, because he loves them. Father said the best way for him to love such people is to let them learn from the words he speaks to others. They can repent and repeat the process of resurrection to have their spiritual selves return to the normal form.

Let's say there is a farmer. He has sown the seeds, and these seeds have now sprouted. Now the farmer's job is to leave them be so they can grow. He should not foolishly pull up the sprouts in hopes of making them grow faster. In a similar way, I have witnessed many instances where Father treated people differently according to whether they were in Father's realm of direct dominion or in the indirect dominion.

Then, when we enter the formation stage, our spirit selves take form. I am always amazed by the word "spirit self".

I had a question that I could not answer while I was attending a Christian church, before joining the Unification Church. We say that our spirit has a body and that our spirit goes to heaven when we die. I wondered where my spirit was? I thought it might be in our brain, because we think with it. Or it might be in our heart, since we feel things with it. I was very curious about the location of my spirit. I even thought at one point that the spirit exists in limbo, like a cloud or fog.

According to "The Incorporeal World and the Corporeal World Whose Center is Human Beings" in the "Principle of Creation", our spirit self develops in exact resemblance to our physical body. So our physical body is like the frame for our spirit body. It may be due to this reason that no two people in the world are exactly alike.

There is an interesting story. One of the 36-couple wives had an uncontrollable rash on her face. Her condition would not improve even after hospital treatment. So, this woman ended up praying to God. "Lord! I am your daughter. I have this painful rash on my face. Please heal me." She begged God. Then, from within her body, she heard God's voice saying, "OK! OK! Apply your saliva to where it itches." She followed God's instruction and her rash later disappeared.

Amazed and overjoyed, she asked, "Lord! Where are you? I heard your voice but I don't know where you are. Where are you?" Then a voice came out of her mouth, saying, "I am here. I am here," and she continuously hit her own genital area with her hands. The voice within her also said, "How come you do not know this! How come you do not know this!"

Father heard this story and found it interesting. When Blessed Families were gathered in Cheongpyeong for a workshop, Father asked the woman to come forward to give her testimony to everyone. She gave a very exciting testimony. Curious, I asked Father, "Does God really exist in the reproductive organ?" Father said, "When He was creating humans, God spent the most time creating man and woman's reproductive organs." This is how important our sexual organs are.

Father gave us many precious words. He said, "I am wearing a body and you are wearing a body, but how many tens of thousands of people do you think I will meet while I am alive?" When we were serving Father in Cheongpa Dong, there was no gatekeeper in that place. Anyone could walk into the house and see Father. When Father later moved to Hannam Dong, we could not enter without permission. It became more difficult to enter. Father was too busy to see all the members who wanted to see him, so he had to limit the number of members coming to Hannam Dong. Father was sad to about this.

Things will be different, once we go to the spirit world. Father told us that when he goes to spirit world, he will become a bright divine spirit emanating light. We will also shine

44

brightly in the spirit world. The intensity of our light will depend on how much we lived our life sincerely while loving God, humankind, and nature. Those who lived such a sincere life will have a brighter light emanating from their spirit self.

This is one eternal truth that cannot be denied. When we leave our physical bodies, the intensity of our light will determine how easily we will be noticed. It will be as if we are looking down from the sky on the night cityscape of Seoul. The brighter lights catch our eyes more quickly than the dim lights. spirit world is filled with countless spirit selves who have separated from their physical bodies, and Father says he will notice the brightest spirit selves first.

Father once told us that when such a bright person leaves the physical world and enters the spirit world, Father will go welcome his child even before his child finds Father. It will be as if the person's father is embracing him, and saying, "My beloved son! Daughter! I wasn't able to be close to you when we were in the physical world, but you have lived your life very sincerely while loving God, people, and all things. Now, let us never be separated. Let's live together forever."

That is why God is fair. Even if we weren't able to attend Father closely in the physical world, we can live with him when we go to the spirit world. This will be the great inspiration to all those who never had a chance to attend Father closely in the physical world. If you are young, you may have some hopes of meeting Father directly, but older people cannot have such hopes. Many older members yearn for True Parents very much.

It does not matter if a person lived in the countryside without any position in the church. If the person lived his life sincerely offering himself to God, his spirit self will become very bright. The important thing is the intensity of light from our spirit selves that we are able prepared before going to the spirit world.

The perfection of the spirit self is the perfection of personality, character and love. This is the reason that, if we live according to the Principle, we will be able to commit sin even if we try. It is difficult not to commit sin in today's world, but when the world of the Principle dawns we will not be able to commit sin.

There was a 430-couple member who died and then came back to life. She said that she was most ashamed of two things while she was receiving her judgment in the spirit world. The first thing she felt ashamed about was her debt of *shimjeong*, her financial debt, and all the favors she owed to other people. The second thing she was ashamed about was how she had hated others while she was alive.

Let us look at the second verse of the Family Pledge.

”Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love.”

Here, we can find the expression “saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth.” I asked Father what a saint was. Father told me that there are three kinds of people: ordinary people, evil people, and saints. Evil people do bad things to people, even those who do good things for them. Ordinary people are just normal. They will be good to you if you are good to them and bad to you if you are bad to them.

Saints will only do good for others, regardless of whether others do good or evil toward them. I asked, “Father, then how is a saint different from the divine sons and daughters?” Father answered, “You can become a saint by obeying the laws of the earth, but divine sons and daughters must also obey the laws of the spirit world.”

Father said, “How have I lived my life? In one sentence, I have walked the path of loving my enemies, living for their sake and loving them.” In other words, growth of the spirit self means the perfection of love and the perfection of character. Therefore, to fulfill the duties of divine sons and daughters means that you must practice something of a higher

45

dimension than saints.

The 16th century Korean patriot Adm. Yi Sun Shin sacrificed his life for our country

and is a hero in the eyes of the Korean people. He could not go to the best place in spirit world, however. This is because he hated Japanese people when he died. Adm. Yi wanted to kill more Japanese soldiers, even as he lay dying. That is why he could not go to the best place in the spirit world. Also, when he was shot, he yelled, “You Japanese bastards!” Since he was unable to love Japanese people on the earth before he died, he could become a hero but not a divine son.

Even those who are revered very much by Korean people do not receive good treatment when they go to the spirit world. Koreans may find this upsetting, but that is the law of the spirit world. When we want to hate or fight people, we must pledge that we will fulfill our duties as divine sons and daughters and overcome such desire. We must not hate anyone.

Do you know who the most powerful people in America are? Surprisingly, it's the Mafia. The Mafia kills people with all sorts of methods for their profit. They have created their own underworld kingdom.

Father tried to develop land-based businesses at first, instead of going out to the ocean. Our church is well-organized so we could make good businesses out of dealing with junk, old cars, or used paper. However, as soon as he tried to establish a business, Father realized that all businesses were connected to the Mafia. It was dangerous to do business without giving a portion of the profits to the Mafia. They had influence even in the garbage collecting business.

Father wanted to create businesses to do good things that would help save people. He could not give the money earned by our members to the Mafia, but the Mafia threatened to kill our members if they didn't get their cut. Father tried to find a business that the Mafia did not have any influence over. So Father went out to the ocean.

Receiving such harsh persecution from Christian churches, Father said one day, "Oh, I wish I could realize the Will by taking revenge just like the Mafia." He must have been greatly disheartened. However, Father still said, "No! That is not the way God wants it. I cannot do that!" As we can see from this, God and Father's strategy is only one way. It is love, sacrifice and service.

46

Chapter 3

The Human Fall

The Meaning of the Tree of Life and the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil

God told Adam and Eve there were many trees in the Garden of Eden, and He gave particular instructions about the Tree of Life and the Tree of Good and Evil. He told them they were free to eat any fruit from the other trees, but to stay away from the Tree of Life and the Tree of Good and Evil. He said not to even look at them, touch them, or eat them.

Father taught us that the Garden of Eden as described in the Bible does not refer to a specific place. Instead, it refers to the bodies of Adam and Eve. People have thought that it meant a specific location on earth.

So when God told Adam and Eve that it was “Alright to eat the fruits from other trees,” he was referring to the other parts of the bodies of Adam and Eve. This is a very important concept.

Adam and Eve were growing up as brother and sister. The Tree of Life and the Tree of Good and Evil meant the sexual organs of Adam and Eve. So Adam and Eve, as siblings, could embrace each other, kiss, hug, and give piggy backs rides, but God told them not to even look, touch, or eat what was at the center of their bodies until the right time came.

There is something we must correct about the “Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.”

A leader of our church arbitrarily changed what the Divine Principle said about the “Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil,” which symbolizes “perfected Eve,” to symbolize “Eve to be perfected,” and recorded it as such in the Divine Principle. This is a grave mistake.

The first printing of the Divine Principle clearly states that it is “Perfected Eve.” So I asked Father about it. Father answered, "Do not write it as “Eve to be perfected.” You are learning the Principle from the fallen position. That is why you do not understand. ‘ Perfected Eve’ means Eve who has perfected herself without falling. Therefore, it should be ‘ perfected Eve.’ "

We must treat each letter in the Divine Principle very carefully. Mr. Hyo Won Eu, the former president of our church, systematized Divine Principle. Yes, but he did so only under Father’s supervision. Therefore, it is obvious that we must ask Father about changing anything in the Divine Principle, since Father is the original author.

¡°Let the second generation know clearly about the root of sin"

In the chapter about the Human Fall, the issue is the “Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil” and the “Tree of Life.”

For several years, Father told me, “Gil Ja, You now have to teach the Principle to the second generation children and train them as Principle lecturers. This is because the Archangel Lucifer tried to seduce Eve beginning when she was 12 years old.”

Blessed second generation children must protect their bodies, beginning when they are 12 years of age. That is why they must learn the Principle and teach the Principle to others. Then the spirit world will be mobilized and the physical world will be liberated. Father told us this.

Father told me to do this some years ago. The biggest problem was how to make

47

them understand what the Tree of Good and Evil and the Tree of Life symbolized and how Eve and the Archangel engaged in an illicit sexual relationship. It is not easy for children to understand. I worried a lot: "How am I going to explain this in easy terms?"

Describing man's sexual organ and woman's sexual organ as convex and concave, Father said, "marriage is the coming together of a man's convex part and woman's concave part. So, what is the Fall? It is giving a convex or concave part to a counterpart to whom it does not belong."

So, when we receive permission from God through the Holy Blessing and come together with our rightful partner, it becomes a rightful marriage. But, if we come together with the wrong partner, then it becomes the Fall. Children were able to understand it easily with this explanation.

Father has been saying this for a while now. When we rise in the morning, we wash our face. When we wash our face, we must bend down to where the faucet is. Nobody washes his face while standing upright. Everyone bends over. It means that people are extending a morning greeting to God, "God, did you sleep well?" People greet God without even knowing it.

Father said Unification Church members should greet God even more. "God, did you sleep well?" We do this and then we say, "Mr. Convex, Mrs. Concave, did you sleep well? I shall protect you well today." It is because it is the most important thing.

As I taught second generation children, I've told them to tell their parents, "Mom! Dad! Teacher told me to greet my convex part, or my concave part." Then, if mom and dad ask "How did she tell you to greet it?" I've told them to say "My concave-nim, convex-nim. Hello. I shall protect you well."

Parents were very delighted to find out that I taught the children to run away or yell for help if any boy tried to stare at or touch a girl's concave part, as he is the thief of the worst kind. Parents were reassured that I was teaching them correctly and could breathe a little easier.

A Japanese mother, however, came to me one day. She was bathing her daughter when she touched her daughter's genital area. The daughter told her mother, "Mom! Teacher told me to never let anyone touch there. So don't touch it!" Then she cried. So I was worried. I told the young girl that it was OK since her mother was only trying to wash her.

I told Father one day, "Father, I've been making it easy for the second generation children to understand. When I taught them about concave and convex, the second generation children said, 'We understand. We will protect it.' Also, fathers and mothers are very happy too." Father was very happy to hear that. Then he said, "Yes, you are right. Concave and convex is the secret that only Unification Church knows. Keep educating." You should tell your children that they should not touch others' genital area. They should also be taught that they should not touch their own genital area either.

Father's expression of concave and convex is such a good expression. Please teach your children before they commit such a sin.

48

The Motivation of the Fall

There are a lot of verses in the Bible which speak about angels, which are spiritual beings. We can really believe in their existence when we recall the story of how Abraham offered some food to an angel who visited him and the angel ate the food. Angels are so strong that one of them wrestled with Jacob and broke his thigh bone. It is only because we are fallen that it is difficult for us to imagine such situations.

Let us now discuss the motivation for the Fall. Why did humans fall? Knowing the motivation for the Fall is most important in the path of restoration, so Father's words about it will be of great use.

God created the angelic world first before he created all things. God could have created all things by Himself, but it was easier when there were helping hands. Would it not be easier if there was someone to talk to and run errands?

There were three archangels: Lucifer, Michael, and Gabriel. These three archangels had different missions. Lucifer's mission was to receive God's love and distribute it to the whole angelic world. Michael was the angel of praising God, and Gabriel was God's messenger. Out of the three archangels, we realize that Lucifer was, without question, the leader of the three when we look at it from the point of view of their mission. According to Father, archangel Lucifer was a very loyal servant of God.

Then, what is God's love? God's love in the spirit world is the same as the air that we have to keep breathing when we exist in the physical world. Air is something that we absolutely need if we are to live. Just as we feel refreshed and joyous when we breathe in fresh and clean air, we breathe in God's love in the spirit world as we had breathed air in the physical world. We become more happy, satisfied, and joyous when we receive more of God's love.

Archangel Lucifer was immensely happy with all the love he was receiving from God until God created Adam and Eve.

According to Father, Adam and Eve did not have a mother. He said that God made them personally. In other words, Adam and Eve did not come from a mother's womb. God created Adam and Eve so that they were able to walk from birth.

Some animals can walk right after they come out of their mother's womb. Baby cows and horses can do that. So I asked Father, "What did God feed Adam and Eve instead of breast milk?" Father answered that God fed them spiritually. Of course, Adam and Eve would have begun consuming physical food after awhile.

How much would God have loved Adam and Eve after creating them as His children? It was because God and the archangels were in a master-servant relationship but God and Adam and Eve were in a parent-child relationship. Adam and Eve were to grow and become the body of God and become the substantial self of God. So the level of love bestowed on them was different. That is why Lucifer, when he looked at Adam and Eve receiving God's love, felt "Oh, they are receiving more love than me." Lucifer felt that the love he was receiving was diminished.

Father explained that the feeling of diminished love itself is not a fallen nature. God gave all created beings the intellectual ability to compare so that they would want to compete with one another and develop faster. Therefore, the feeling of diminished love itself is not a fallen nature. We need the intellectual ability to compare before we can feel 'I want to do it better than so and so.' so, the feeling that comes naturally from the intellectual ability to compare is the feeling of diminished love.

49

But what was added in there? Self-centeredness, selfishness was added to his feeling of diminished love caused by the intellectual ability to compare. This became the original nature of fallen nature.

Lucifer realized that though he loved God and God love him back, God loved Adam more than him. He also realized that he was supposed to love Adam and Eve who were

receiving more of God's love than him. However, Lucifer began to think about himself. Self-centeredness means that you think from your own standpoint. How did Lucifer think? Borrowing from Father's words, Lucifer thought "What am I? How could it be that Adam and Eve who never went through any suffering receive God's love more than me? I went through so much suffering!"

Lucifer had been thinking that he monopolized God's love. However, when he saw Adam and Eve receiving God's love more than him, he could not bare the pain caused by the feeling of diminished love, and he began to think centering on himself.

Father said that God had to endure much hardship when He made the creation. He had to invest everything He had, so much so that He was completely exhausted after creating all things. So the archangels who were helping Him must have also been completely exhausted. Lucifer was jealous because he worked so hard for God but God loved Adam and Eve more than him. As such, self-centeredness is "looking back at oneself."

We must look to others if we are to escape from this self-centeredness. Father asked us one day, "Can you see your own face without a mirror?" If we don't have a mediator called a mirror, we cannot see our face until the day we die. What that means is that God created us human beings in such a way that we can't see our own face because we don't need to. Rather, we must look at the faces of others.

Why do we have to look at others' faces? It is because what I want, my joy, and my love does not begin from myself but begins from making others happy and loving others. On the other hand, if we cause others' sadness, then we become sad as well. That is why we must look at others first. Be conscious of others before we are conscious of ourselves.

Father said, "How sick and tired would we get if we were to always look at our own faces? We should look at the faces of others. Only then will our life not become boring since we always receive new stimulation. It is because God created human beings so that we would live for the sake of others.

After he became self-centered, Lucifer locked up God like a senile old man, treated Him as an obsolete being, and took further steps to deny Gods existence.

Communism started when Lucifer denied God and began to fall. Atheism first began when Lucifer thought, "Now I can replace God." This is the reason why the Messiah has to resolve the problem of atheism which started from the spirit world and communism which is the atheism of the physical world. This is the most important mission.

When the archangel Lucifer fell together with Eve, He insisted that God did not exist and he practiced his false love from the same position as God. However, if Lucifer was to faithfully remain in his servant position, he had to praise God in front of Adam and Eve.

The role and the duty of a faithful servant was to keep praising God, saying "Adam, Eve! God created the beautiful Sun and Moon and flowers and trees and all sorts of things." However, forgetting his duty, Lucifer wanted to receive more respect from Adam and Eve than God and he tried to receive more of God's love.

He began to have an unrighteous desire to grab Eve's attention and make her his own, thinking that maybe he could gain the position of God's child. He then seduced Eve and fell.

50

The Course of the Fall

Father recently spoke about something new.

At the time when the Fall took place, Adam was not yet at the stage of growth where he could feel stimulation from the opposite sex. He only thought of Eve as his little sister.

God created all things before he created humans. Also, the purpose of all things was centered upon Adam and Eve. All things were designed so that they could not feel the love of God directly. They were to feel God's love by being consumed by human beings, then becoming the cells. Only then they could feel the love of God.

God was letting Adam learn from all things. He thought about how to teach Adam to love at a level that is higher than that of animals when he makes love to Eve after perfecting himself. Adam watched the process of mating, giving birth to offspring, and raising the babies of different creatures from small insects to large animals. Adam learned from nature how the creatures cared for each other and made love to each other.

Why did Adam do that? It is because all things are an exhibition of love. Father sometimes used to tell us, "You should make love while whispering into your spouse's ear, cooing like a dove, and the next day make love like tigers while bellowing loudly."

So Adam went around searching for creatures making love so he could learn how to make love through his observations. Adam and Eve did not have another school. Nature and all things themselves were the school for Adam and Eve.

As apple trees blossom in the spring, grow their fruit during the summer, and bear ripe fruit in the autumn while giving out a pleasant scent, Adam and Eve, when they perfected themselves, were supposed to be ripe and their body temperature would rise just by looking at each other. Then they would've understood that they were meant for each other. In other words, God created Adam and Eve so that they would make love to each other. They were to make love to each other in way that is of the highest level.

So the term ' Lord of creation ' has a very deep meaning. When you look at all things, female and male only get together in order to reproduce. God restricted them in such a manner. However, human beings have no such restriction in making love. A couple who has received the Blessing can make love as much as they want. Father says that this is the special privilege of love given to humans. Humans are ' the Lords of creation ' because they have this privilege of love.

Adam diligently observed nature and learned about love. Father said that for this reason, men have to keep going to different places. So it is good that men don't have much fat on their buttocks. When a man sits for too long, he starts to get cramps. According to Father, men are good for moving around since they don't have much fat on their buttocks and their broad shoulders make them good workers.

However, women have more fat in this area so they want to sit down when there is an opportunity. A woman's pelvis needs to be bigger if a baby is to stay inside the womb comfortably. Women have more things to do while sitting down such as breast-feeding the baby and that is why they have bigger buttocks and have more fat in this area. That's normal. Women don't get tired no matter how long they sit if they have a good cushion.

So, Adam, being a man, kept going to different places. However, Eve got tired of following Adam and she complained, "Adam, let's take a break! I'm tired, I can't continue!" Then she sat under a shady tree and waited until Adam returned.

Then Adam played with snakes or frogs and threw them at Eve like a mischievous

51

child. Eve's face turned blue as she said, "Ew, nasty. No!" However, Adam only did that because he was bored since Eve didn't follow him. Adam did this to get Eve to continue following him.

Eve still didn't follow him so what was Adam supposed to do? He had to keep studying so he kept on going to different places. So there she was in the shade, waiting for her older brother to come back. She dozed off at one point and that's when Lucifer,

who was waiting for the right moment to approach Eve, came over to Eve and played with her, talking to her sweetly.

Adam acted like a mischievous child towards Eve but Lucifer was kinder and treated Eve better than Adam. So Eve felt attracted to Lucifer. Not only that, Lucifer was smarter than Adam. He knew about a lot more things, so Eve probably even respected him. Eve was no match for Lucifer who was determined to seduce her.

I asked Father one day, "Then, wasn't there any way for Eve to repel the archangel's seduction?" Father answered, "Yes. God could not do anything even though He knew about the archangel's plan since Adam and Eve were still in the realm of the indirect dominion. However, Eve could have avoided falling if she had reported to God or Adam when the archangel seduced her."

Father said that God could have prevented Eve from falling if only Eve had reported to Him or Adam. As the archangel hugged and kissed her, Eve should have known that something was wrong and had to either ask Adam or report to God.

While describing how the fall took place, Father asked us, "Hey, so Adam and Eve were naked. How do you think the archangel was: naked or dressed? Can you answer this?" We answered, "He was naked." Father said "Yes, that's right." Then Father asked, "It says in the Principle that the archangel was male, right? Then do you think the archangel had a penis or not?" We answered, "He must have had one!"

So, what happened when Eve and Lucifer fell? Father described it very vividly. He didn't used to describe it so vividly but I think he does now because the time has come. The naked Lucifer and Eve were sitting facing each other. Father said, "Normally, Lucifer hugged Eve from the side but he was hugging Eve from the front on that day. So, if Lucifer thrust his penis strongly then don't you think his penis would have gone in? Eve was defenseless."

Eve was surprised. It is only when Lucifer's sexual organ penetrated her organ that she realized, "This is bad. This is what God told us to not even look at, touch, or eat." She had a sexual organ but she didn't even know how to use it.

What did Lucifer say would happen if they ate the Fruit of the Tree of Good and Evil? He said their eyes would open. And that's what happened. Eve realized her mistake. "Oh, the archangel who was so nice to me is actually my servant. He is not supposed to be my partner. My partner is supposed to be Adam who I thought was only my older brother!" Then she went after Adam.

Eve went to Adam and begged him to eat the fruit together with her. At first, Adam did not give in to her demand. "What are you talking about? God told us not to eat it, remember? He said we shouldn't look, touch, or eat. Why eat it?" Adam refused. But Eve was persistent.

Adam finally gave in to her persistent demand: "Oh, do as you wish." Then Adam and Eve commit the physical fall.

Do you think Adam was happy when he fell? No. He thought "No! No!" at first but he fell feeling anxiety and horror.

Father explained that if Adam had not fallen but had pushed Eve away, Eve could have been restored from her fallen position. Adam fell once but what did Adam have? He had God's lineage, the seed of life. That was lost to Satan's side. That could not be restored so easily. Since original sin is passed down through the lineage, it cannot be gotten rid of so easily. That is why God had to find the chosen people and the Messiah.

52

How hard did God have to work in order to send the Messiah? God was so grief-stricken and angry that he even thought "Should I just create a second archangel and second Adam and Eve and just kill the rest?" He had the power so why didn't He do it? It was because he couldn't eliminate the Principle of human responsibility that should have prevented them from eating the fruit.

So Father said, "There was a possibility for the second archangel and Adam and Eve to fall again. Because of that, God had to commence the Restoration Providence with the fallen Adam and Eve."

Since the human fall happened centering on the body in such a brief moment, we, who do not know the Restoration Providence, must not lower our guard but instead, follow the Messiah. Only then we can go through the process of restoration.

Eve realized that Adam was her partner only after falling spirituality by the archangel's seduction. Then she nagged Adam to fall physically.

The physical fall of Adam and Eve became the beginning of conflicting love which lead their mind and body to separate. This is the problem. The biggest problem is that Adam and Eve forsook God and fell completely centering on themselves.

What caused the archangel to seduce Eve to fall was his selfish desire and his failure to love God, Adam, and Eve. What caused Eve to seduce Adam to fall was her self-

centered judgment which led her to think “Maybe I can be forgiven by God and return to Him” if she fell with Adam even though God did not permit it. Both the Physical Fall and Spiritual Fall happened through self-centeredness.

53

The meaning and the secret of self-denial

The self-centeredness of the archangel who wanted to receive more love from God was transferred to Eve, and then to Adam, and this ultimately was inherited by their offspring. Today, all humans have become self-centered.

If humanity is to return to God, humans basically have to walk the path that is the opposite of self-centeredness. In other words, we must practice complete ‘self-denial.’ Satan stays with those who keep on living in self-centered ways. Therefore, we must deny ourselves and live our lives centered on God.

Father tells us that there are many ways to deny ourselves but the most effective way is to be persecuted by other people. Self-denial is achieved when we endure harsh persecution and achieve victory. So following Father while doing something that we don’t like is an important way of practicing self-denial, and offering sincere *jeongseong* is another way of denying ourselves.

The reason why Father makes us do impossible tasks, instead of possible ones, is because he wants to help us deny ourselves. We should take the path of as much suffering as possible in order to escape from the grasp of self-centeredness as soon as possible.

Father told us once when he was in America, “The archangel’s self-centeredness was passed onto human beings. God’s Restoration Providence has taken 6,000 years to change the selfishness and self-centeredness which we have received from the archangel to other-centeredness, that is, discarding our selfishness and living for the sake of others.

As mentioned earlier, self-denial is the exact opposite of self-centeredness. Self-centeredness is the attitude that makes us say, ‘I can do anything I want! Lucifer did what he wanted. Self-denial, however, is the opposite; it’s the attitude that leads us to say “I don’t want to do it but I will! It’s difficult to do this but I will make it happen no matter what!” However, self-denial is not so easy.

Then, who received the most training in self-denial? Father said it was him. Father received so much training in self-denial from God that God never allowed him to do

the things that he wanted to do, things that he could easily do. God ceaselessly made him do things he didn't want to do, things he couldn't easily do, training Father to deny himself.

Father told us an example. He said that the hardest time while receiving this training of self-denial was when eight of his most beloved friends and relatives died. Once, Father's younger sister whom he adored so much died very young. There was even one time Father met a friend that made him think "I like him, I really want to share my heart with him." Then his friend was struck by disease and died. Eight of those whom Father loved so much passed away, some of them went missing and some of them died in the water when a boat crashed.

Father thought, "Oh, why do I have to go through this kind of hardship? Why does God train me so harshly?" However, in hindsight, Father came to the realization, "Yes! Adam could not be perfected and become united with God." He realized that, until Father reached the point where he was completely one with God in love, God could not allow so much as a single hair to come between Him and Father.

During his difficult training, he thought "Alright, God has separated Satan from me by putting me through complete self-denial, and I can train the leaders of the Unification Church by putting them in the position of complete self-denial just as God has led me!"

Brothers and sisters, we have joined the Unification Church because we like it, correct? We joined the church because we like the Principle, like the Will of God, and we entered with hopes, yes? However, how do you feel now? The church keeps making you do things that you don't want to, right? Why is that? That is because Satan likes it when we do things that we like doing, so we must take the opposite path and practice self-denial, doing things that we don't like, things that are difficult and impossible.

Tithing and economic restoration are difficult, right? However, we still have to do

54

it. Witnessing - difficult, yes? But we still must witness. What about the Blessing? Receiving the Blessing and making others receive the Blessing is difficult, isn't it? However, we still have to Bless. It all works as self-denial training for us, training that leads us to return to God.

When somebody reported to Father, "This member worked very hard in the church then left," Father said, "I see. He didn't know the Principle so well." It is because the Principle requires self-denial from us. The reason why we must know the Principle

well is because we must do the things that we must even though they may be difficult, and they are our path of returning to God.

Therefore, we cannot complain if we know the Principle. We must do the things that we must. We have to summon all our energy to just do it. Father even said once "God often made me do things that I just could not do, and everytime, I did the task with the determination to throw away my life. You wouldn't be able to imagine how much I cried and shivered in pain. Unification Church would not be where it is today if it only took the comfortable path. We are here today because God whipped us and forced us to move."

Father even had a special way of thinking - even when he went to prison. Prisoners normally walk very slowly because they would do anything to avoid the prison. However, Father walks in as if he is running. Father enters the prison with joy, anticipating that someone must be waiting for him in there already because God always prepares twelve disciples for him.

Father enters the prison with great hopes in his heart, thinking 'Who has God prepared for me this time?' That is because Father knew the law of indemnity. But Father is also a human with a physical body. Joy could not have been the only feeling he experienced.

Father told us that the archangel tried to seduce Eve from age twelve . We therefore regularly teach the Principle to the second and third generation children starting at age twelve .

So God's Restoration Providence is a battle of love between the side of Heaven and the side of Satan. Satan seduced Eve with unjust love, so why shouldn't we be able to bring the people in the Satanic world to the side of Heaven if we give them true love? Shouldn't we have to invest a lot of *jeongseong* in order to bring them to the side of Heaven?

Everyone in the early days of the church was spiritually attracted because Father bestowed us with the True Love of God, in other words, the love of sacrificing for others. It wasn't only women who were spiritually attracted to Father. There were many men too.

On the journey of the Path of Will, I have slowly begun to forget myself. Father said that we have to be in such a state of self-denial that when he asks us one day, "Who are you?" we shouldn't even be able to answer.

Who are the people close to the Heaven's side? Who are the people close to Satan's side? People become stubborn and self-centered as much as they are close to Satan's side. Then, what does it mean to life in self-denial? It means that we are standing in the position of the object partner of God and True Parents.

Father has taught us the way to forget ourselves. Father told us that we must always attend God and True Parents and never leave for even a brief moment. So he always told us to pray. Father said that we should always have three conditions when praying.

First, when we pray, we must greet God. As His children, we of course have to greet Him first when we pray. In other words, we have to say hello in detail, such as "I am so and so." Also, we who attend True Family are the Cain-side family, so giving a sincere prayer for True Parents' Family is, according to Father, a greeting. As praying for the Family of True Parents is joining in the heavenly fortune brought by the victory of True Parents' Family, we must sincerely pray for True Parents' Family.

Second, we must report. We have to give reports often, saying, "I am doing such and such things." We have to report about good things and bad things that happened during the

55

day.

Third, we have to ask God. "God, how shall we solve this problem?" - We have to keep asking. I also live my life in such a manner. I always report and I always ask. Father told us to then wait for the answer that God gives us.

True Parents always work so hard to represent God, so much so that they almost lose consciousness of themselves. As we think of True Parents' words, always ask Parents as if you live in personal attendance to them. If we live our lives while thinking "I am not the center of my everyday life, it's True Parents," then we can receive inspiration with which we can find the solution. We can solve any problem if we stand in the position of complete object partner in front of True Parents.

Also, something that really helps when witnessing is to keep calling the name of the one you are trying to witness to. ' Young Ja Kim! Young Ja Kim! Young Ja Kim!' Like this. If you keep calling their names like that, than that person will want to meet you, want to call you, and start to miss you. Then they will come and find you out of their longing for you.

Father called our names very diligently during the early days. We didn't know this at the beginning. We were all hot-blooded 20-something-year-olds at the time of Cheong Pa Dong. After getting expelled from Ehwa Women's University, I took a break for one year then entered Sook Myeong Women's University with major in medicine. I couldn't come to church in the mornings because there were many mock exams for the state-issued test. I always went to the church on my way back home. If I didn't stop by the church, I could not focus on studying at home. I couldn't do anything because I missed Father so much.

Those who had jobs had to stop by the church, and even housewives had to stop by the church. Father came down from the second floor of the old headquarters church at 7 in the morning. Then people, with their eyes wide-open, rushed to see him as if there was a fire. Father told these members "Did you see Teacher in your dream last night? You couldn't even sleep because you wanted to see him, right?"

It was actually true. Members broke into tears and sobbed, saying, "Yes, that's right!" After awhile, Father asks, "Who made you like that?" and begins explaining. "The reason why you are in such state is not you but me. I spent the whole night last night calling your names in my prayer." That is why we dreamed about Father and always found ourselves thinking about Father.

Father offers such sincere prayer and thinks "Let's wait and watch. I've offered so much *jeongseong* and called the names of these members. I'll see how the spirit world helps me." Then he goes to bed. Then, lo and behold, members came running to the church in the morning .

Some members' feet moved towards the church on their way to work, and some members took the wrong bus and ended up at the church. Such miracles happened. People were going mad every morning. It was maddening but they still came, even though there was nothing to do at the church. This is the secret of witnessing. We must have within us the heart of loving others, and if we drive ourselves insane in hopes of rescuing them from death, that person will be driven mad too. Then we can open the path.

Unimaginable persecution that I received in the early days of the church made me angry and disheartened but I still remained on the path of following the Will. Father asked us when we were still students, "What kind of heart do you go with as you walk the Path of the Will?" So I told him, "I go with cold vengeance in my heart!" He said, "Then you are good."

I was burning with vengeance. However, after so much time, that vengeance has become the vengeance of love. In other words, I realized that true revenge is to love our enemies and subjugate them naturally.

56

shimjeong and Salvation

The moment Adam and Eve engaged in unprincipled love, in other words, the moment when they wondered if they should make love or not, their mind and body became separated.

We normally say that Adam and Eve fell when they were immature. However, what kind of immaturity was it? It was the immaturity of *shimjeong*.

Would Eve have fallen if she understood how sad God would become if she were seduced by the archangel? Eve could not feel the *shimjeong* of God. Our distance between God is great when our *shimjeong* is still immature. That is why Adam and Eve fell. That is also why they could not perfect their conscience. Father taught us that *shimjeong* can sprout from the ground of perfected conscience, but Adam and Eve failed to enter that stage.

None of the religions can advance beyond the growth period of the completion stage. All religions, including Christianity, work to wake up our conscience. For example, they teach people to "do this, do that, don't do this, don't do that." They help people to live according to their conscience. However, Satan keeps stalking religion which tries to guide our conscience.

Father taught us about *shimjeong*. Our church is a religion of *shimjeong*.

How is a religion of *shimjeong* different from a religion of conscience? The religion of *shimjeong* goes one step beyond a religion of conscience and lives in attendance to God. It means that because the religion of *shimjeong* becomes united in *shimjeong* with God, in other words, achieves the perfection of *shimjeong*, thus Satan cannot have a base to accuse it. These are Father's words.

I asked Father, "What is *shimjeong*?" Father stayed silent for a moment and then replied, "*shimjeong* is internal love." When we divide love into its internal and external aspects, internal love is love before any expression of it is made. In other words, it is like the root of love. Therefore, when *sungsang* love is expressed as *hyungsang* love, it is manifested into a more concrete action of love.

What is first love? It is the love that we feel for the first time. Then where did the first love of Eve go? It was given to the servant, Lucifer. The first love of Eve was stolen by the spiritual fall she committed with the archangel. Her first love that was supposed to be given to Adam was destroyed.

Therefore, the elimination of original sin means the restoration of the heartistic lineage which Satan cannot invade (Father's Speech, 13, p. 198). The "restoration of the heartistic lineage" means the restoration of the Spiritual Fall, and it also means the restoration of the Physical Fall.

Father said that all Blessed Families have to enter the Parents' lineage at one point in its generations. Only then the whole tribe, from the root ancestor, can receive complete restoration.

The meaning and purpose of a Blessed Family lies in raising children to become flawless and then offer them to Parents' Family.

I once said to Father:

"How much better things would have turned out if God had married the archangel first so that he didn't have to seduce Eve?"

Father replied, "There is order in love as well. God's son and daughter must marry first before the servant can get married!" Father went on to explain that God was going to bless the archangel after blessing Adam and Eve.

57

Perfection of science is possible only through the cooperation spirit world

God has placed angels in the sun, moon, and the stars in the universe. There was a sci-fi movie where there are life forms in the Mars, a planet similar in condition with Earth, and they invaded Earth, right?

So I asked Father what are the flying saucers? Father said they are angels. Flying saucers came down to Earth and were seen by humans but they never stayed for too long. They only appeared in front of people briefly.

Father said that angels are placed in the universe for us human beings. Space science cannot be perfected in the physical realm. The scientists who study the space claim that they can perfect the science because they do not know about God's purpose of creation. While we are wearing this physical body, there is no where for us to live outside of this

pouch of oxygen. Earth is the only place that has air. Is there air in other planets? No. Without air, humans cannot survive.

It is designed so that spiritual body is to travel through the universe that is grand and unchanging. We human beings perfect our spiritual body and escape from our physical body at one point and go to the spirit world. In the spirit world, we are at the sun if we just think about being in the sun. If we just think about being at the moon, we can go to the moon.

What Father is anticipating with joy is his journey to the space with his spiritual body after he sheds his physical body. He said he wants to go to the space and see everything after shedding his physical body.

As such, space science cannot be perfected in the physical realm. It is impossible while we wear the physical body. One day in Alaska, Father sprinkled the cold sea water at us and told us to look at the distant horizon. "Look at this vast ocean. In the future, ocean science will develop more than space science." Father said that we can touch the ocean water but the entirety of space is too far away from our physical bodies.

Father told us "God still hasn't revealed two places on Earth." One is the ocean, and the other is the jungles of Africa. According to Father, these two places can only be developed when the cooperation between the spirit world and science is made. The spirit world must tell us what is where in what longitude and latitude so go there and develop, then the science travels to the location and development is made possible.

Also, Father said that if science is to be developed to that level, it is only possible when they serve the Lord.

58

The path of True Love that Blessed Families must walk

Fallen humans must receive the Blessing of God in order to advance from the position of the archangel to the restored archangel, to the restored Adam, and then to the position of perfected Adam.

In this world, spouses fight and many of them end up divorcing. Father told us that the reason why spouses of the world do not last long even though they love each other lies here. However, Blessed Families overcome such obstacles because they are brought together centering on God and True Parents.

A few days after Father blessed me to my husband, Father told me, "Gil Ja, come here." Then he said, "Do you love Teacher? You must love your husband now as you have loved Teacher. The bones inside your husband are Teacher, and the flesh is your husband. I exist inside of your husband's body."

Then he said, "The unseen bones inside of your body are Mother, and the flesh which you can see is you. Therefore, Mother is inside of you as well. Therefore, when you make love, it is as if Parents are making love too. If Parents open the door and enter the room when you and your husband are making love, do not hide or stop but continue." Then he further told me that I should say, "Welcome, Parents. We are making love in your attendance." when Parents enter the room while we making love.

When waking up in the middle of the night, the husband would see his wife. Then, before calling out to her "Honey!," he should first acknowledge True Parents by saying "True Parents!" and then begin to touch his wife. The children who are given birth by parents who make love with such a state of mind resemble their parents not only physically but their inner character resembles that of True Parents. We can see this from our second generation children. Father looks at them and can tell immediately if the children's parents loved heaven more or loved each other more.

Then why must we do this? It is because it is the restoration of the Spiritual Fall.

Eve was embraced by the archangel Satan before she was embraced by Adam. In other words, she lost her first love to the archangel who was a servant. The loss of the first love meant that the problem of *shimjeong* arose.

If we are to restore the first love that Satan took away, we must first love True Parents and then love ourselves next. It is only right that we must love our spouse upon the foundation that we have loved our parents first, isn't it? It is only natural. This is how we, the Blessed Families, are different from other families of the world. Other families only love each other. Since the love of such a family is horizontal, it is not connected to eternal life.

Did the Blessed Families come together because they liked each other? In other words, the husband belongs to Parents, and the wife belongs to Parents too. When we first erect the vertical love centering on God and True Parents, that love is connected on the horizontal level, and then it is further connected to the physical body. The *heart* of parents and children is to all become united with Parents.

What do you think? Isn't that right? We are truly fortunate to have been able to join the Unification Church in this age. It is because we can give birth to better children since you couples are connected together by vertical love.

Father told us never to look down on our husband or wife only because he or she is not perfect. As we live our life in attendance to True Parents, we would be looking down on True Father if we look down on our husband.

Deeply loving your spouse and living in attendance to True Parents means that

59

husband and wife serve and love each other as if they are Father and Mother. How happy will God become when He sees such a loving family?

Second generation children do not have much selfishness. Father said that even though second generation children are born without original sin, the spirits of new born children will be clean beginning in the third generation children since the spiritual body of first and second generation members are stained and blotchy with the sins of our ancestors like dirty clothes. Second generation children live in an environment where the Fall can take place at any time, so they must be careful.

The reason why first generation members received the Blessing and lived apart for three years is because only then they could indemnify the sins of their respective ancestors. Father told us that it takes three years for us to completely indemnify our ancestor's sins.

Father once told us, "As the parent, why would I want to force my children to stay separated for three years? It is because they will suffer a lot of hardships if they live without the three years period of separation after receiving the Blessing." We must understand that the three years period of separation exists for indemnification.

If Blessed Families build their horizontal love after clearly establishing the vertical love by loving God and True Parents first during this three years separation period, then they become aware of how they must practice love.

When people receive the Blessing, at first they don't even know how to practice love. If a Blessed couple live together without the separation period, they are heavily bombarded on the spiritual level and they end up hating and leaving each other. True Parents who knew this gave us the three years separation period because they love their children. We must realize the infinite love of True Parents in the deepest level of our heart. These days, we have received the grace of having this separation period reduced a lot upon the foundation of True Parents' victory.

60

Chapter 4

Eschatology and Human History

The Messiah:

His Advent and the Purpose of His Second Coming Phenomenon at the Last Days and their meanings

People who do not know the Principle think about the Last Days and imagine that it would be an age when the ground splits open and fire rains from heaven; in other words, the complete annihilation of humanity. However, people who know the Principle believe that the Last Days is a very good age when Satan's sovereignty ends and God's sovereignty begins, the time when Heaven on Earth and in Heaven begins.

As the age when the Messiah comes is the age when Satan's sovereignty will come to complete destruction, the root of sin is clearly revealed. Now is the age when there are the worst kinds of people who commit evil crimes and good people who follow the Messiah in order to reclaim the sovereignty of God all mixed together. Therefore, this is an age of confusion where it is difficult to discern who is good and who is bad. The reason that now is an age of confusion is because the Restoration Providence (Salvation Providence) is the providence of re-creation. Now that the Messiah has come back in order to finish the providence of re-creation, he has to re-create by creating order in the midst of chaos just as God created all things out of chaos through creating order.

This is an age where people are lost, oblivious about which direction they must go. The world will see a lot of crimes committed by adolescents because Adam and Eve were around that age when they fell in the Garden of Eden. This will become a big problem in society, but we who have no worries about falling into the evil way of life because we serve and follow the Messiah are truly happy people.

There will be many signs appearing at the Last Days. We have learned about this through Father's Words or through learning the Principle. What's important here is that we understand the meanings of the phenomenon which will happen the Last Days.

The ancestors of the Korean people went through an incredible course of indemnity in order to allow the birth of Father to take place in this land. I anguished too during the Japanese colonial period and the reign of communism, thinking "What kind of sins did our ancestors commit? Is it just that we are stupid?" I endured those hard times but now, in hindsight, it was the Korean people's course of suffering in order to allow the birth of the Lord in this land. I believe I have already spoken about the greatest indemnity payment that had to be made by the clans closest to Parents.

The indemnity of the Abel side that is close to Father has all been paid. However, the Cain side who still opposes Father has indemnity left to pay. But Father says that their indemnity will be paid by an even harsher method. Large-scale disasters in Korea or foreign nations such as hurricanes or tsunamis are a kind of indemnity of the Cain side.

These phenomena, on the one hand, work to reveal the glory of Father. How so? When such disasters happen, people will fall into despair, thinking "Oh, we can't trust anything anymore. How will we live?" Won't the people of the Satanic world look to heaven and yearn for the hand of salvation when such tremendous calamities occur that cannot be overcome by human effort?

The members in the early days of the church heard a lot about how Heaven's Will will be fulfilled in three years or seven years. However, Father's words were not realized. I was so frustrated and I asked Father, "Father, what's Heaven's time schedule?" In other words, I asked him "When will the Will be fulfilled?"

Father answered, "Look at the newspapers!" Father meant that the allen archangel will do things before God does them in the world, so we will know what God will do when we

61

read about worldly affairs in the newspapers. God follows Satan in order to restore the harm done by Satan.

I normally didn't read the politics section in the newspapers, but after listening to Father's words, I started reading them, at least the headlines, if I didn't have too much time, in order to understand what is happening in the world. We can know the next step of God's work when we understand what is happening in the world.

This is also an important thing that we must know in Eschatology.

There were many Last Days in the history of the Restoration Providence, but why did God keep extending the Restoration Providence? Father told us that it took God 6,000 years to set a condition by repeatedly extending the Providence of Restoration in order to find the path that Satan could not invade.

Then will God leave evil alone? No, he won't. When I was a Presbyterian, I even thought once after listening to Eschatology, "The world must end quickly. I believe in Jesus so I will rise up to the clouds and ascend to heaven."

There are still many believers who literally believe that they will rise up into the clouds and ascend to heaven and are waiting for the day when that will happen. Since the day they are awaiting has not come, they will begin to think that maybe the Lord will come in a physical body. Then the Christians will look around to see where the Lord has come and they won't be able to help but to believe that Rev. Moon, who has accomplished such miraculous things, is no doubt the returning Lord.

62

Eschatology and the structure of the human body

When we look at Eschatology in the Divine Principle, it says that Heaven resembles one person's body. Father once entered the spirit world and what he learned by meeting God who did not have a form was that God appeared in the form of a human being. Therefore, there is no entity in the universe that embodies the truth more than the human body.

Father knew the infinite value that the human body structure has, and he even told us that the human body is the foundation of his thinking. Father spoke about that often. Also, Father discovered that the Bible was written resembling the human body because the Bible is the Word of God. In other words, Father knew which part in the Bible was the head, the body, and the arms and the legs. That's how he was able to unravel the Bible completely.

Theologians in the world still do not know the Bible in its entirety, but only partially. Father said that it is as if a few blind men touched an elephant and gave different descriptions of it. The one who touched its nose said, "Elephants are shaped like serpents." The one who touched the leg said, "Elephants are shaped like pillars." And the one who touched the elephant's belly said, "Elephants are shaped like walls." This is the reason theologians fight over the interpretation of the Bible.

However, after realizing that the human body is the perfect manifestation of the Truth, Father used the human body to find God. Father said that when he looks at a person's face, the most mysterious part is the eyes. Also, when we look at the whole human body, the head symbolizes God, the body symbolizes humans, and the arms and legs symbolize all things.

When we look at the face, the two eyes symbolize the dual characteristics. In other words, they symbolize God. Which part of the face do you look at first when you look at someone? Most people look at the eyes. Father said that it's so mysterious how the eyeballs move around so freely in such a small space.

Father also said that when we look at just the face, the eyes symbolize God, the nose symbolizes humans, and the mouth, all things. As such, the foundation of all Father's thought is the human body. God always appears in the shape of a human body when he appears.

In leading businesses, Father also decides what to do first according to the human body structure. When Father originally started Tongil Industry, he said that "Tongil Industry is the key industry that will work like the spine in the human body." The key industry which makes all sorts of machinery was the first business that Father started after offering much *jeongseong*. Father's idea was that only when the spinal industry is firmly founded, other smaller businesses can attach themselves to the spine, forming an intricate and well-balanced human body.

Father tries to model his businesses after the human body structure like this. As it is expressed in Give and Take Action as well, our body's metabolism must function properly. Businesses also have to be done in such a way in order to develop. We must realize that Father does not do business irrationally but always in accordance with the human body structure.

Father also said that the last industry that has to be formed is the ocean shipping industry. When the human body is completely formed, it must have blood circulation in order to carry on the functions of metabolism. Our body will be healthy only when we have a good metabolism. Father said that ocean shipping industry is similar to the circulation of blood. He said that one day he will have large ships built to bring special goods from one nation to another nation, and then bring the goods of that nation to other nations, and even invite people over to the ship to educate them as well.

63

Strive first to become God's perfect object partner

Father said that we all must have spiritual experiences.

I had a lot of dreams when I first joined the church. spirit world taught me whether the things I was thinking were good or bad. Father said that this was help from my ancestors.

I had quite amazing experiences too. I've come to have a more developed spiritual sense. Also, Father and Mother are always within my consciousness. It could just be that I've spent so much time with Father and Mother but they are always in my consciousness. When I am doing simple tasks like eating, I always have silent

conversations with Father and Mother. As a result, my spiritual sense became sensitive and Father and Mother taught me everything in a very detailed manner.

I worked as the regional director for Texas when I was living in America. Then, I was called by Mother suddenly to attend her for eleven months after Father went to Danbury. The thing is that I have a some-what good brain but I am at the same time a bit slow-witted. One could say that I am tactless. I have a tendency to analyze things when someone tells me a fact. So I have always been smarter than average people in learning about things like Geometry but I am slow in everyday politics, so to speak.

One day, a group of members were seated in a circle with Mother. Mother was speaking about something when she teased me, saying, "Gil Ja still doesn't laugh" since I wasn't getting the meaning of the conversation that was taking place at the time. I was hurt inside but I still couldn't understand the real meaning of what was being said. Then Mother told me, "You should pray to God for wisdom." That was the extent to which I was slow-witted.

I was actually praying a lot already. Mother prayed in her room, and we gathered at the holy ground at East Garden where True Parents used to pray. We offered a prayer vigil from midnight to two in the morning until Father was out of the prison. We were intellectuals who joined the church in its early days after listening to the Principle unlike the spiritually-sensitive people who joined the church through prayers.

But I still prayed very hard because Mother told me too. At first, I would pray "please give me wisdom" and would get no answer. So when I prayed, I first offered a prayer for the greater purpose, praying for the safe release of Father from prison, and then prayed for my own wish, "Heavenly Father! Mother says that I am unwise and slow-witted. Please allow me to have wisdom."

After some prayers, I felt as if God was telling me, "That's some foolish prayer." But I still held onto it like a stubborn child for few months, nagging God for the same thing.

Then I felt in my heart that God was telling me, "You keep saying the same thing. This is getting old. You are annoying." I became really sure that God would give me an answer someday. So I kept on praying, "Heavenly Father! Mother says I'm slow-witted. Please give me wisdom." I prayed like a true fool. Then one day I received an answer.

The temperature was so low in New York that we shivered uncontrollably even after putting on many layers of clothing. It felt as if the wind was trying to penetrate into our bodies and we were cold from head to toe.

It was an incredibly cold day but I did not feel cold at all when I received the spirit of God. It was as warm as springtime. I heard God's voice while a mist embraced me warmly in silence.

God told me, "The wisdom you have sought from me with your prayers does not come from you but it comes from me to you in its entirety when you become my perfect object partner. What is mine will be yours, and what is yours will be mine." In other words, God told me that receiving wisdom is not the important thing but becoming the perfect object partner to God is. I received such a grace-filled and realistic revelation from God.

64

The Heavenly Mother that we must know

We must know that there is not only Heavenly Father but Heavenly Mother as well.

There is a old lady named Wol Gwang Lee in Daegu. She was very open spiritually so much so that she asks questions to God and God answers all of them. She was the first one to discover Heavenly Mother, and she had a special ability of healing people since when she was in a Christian church. She used her special spiritual ability to heal others but she refrained from doing it after joining our church and listening to the Principle.

However, sick people kept coming to her, asking to be healed, so she was sometimes forced to heal people. But she would pay indemnity if she healed people. She was so sick of it that one day she promised a pastor to participate in a healing prayer service but then broke the promise and didn't go.

Then God became angry and left her. After God left her, she said that she felt as if she was thrown into a pitch black void, unable to know whether she was falling or rising, unable to tell which was front and back. She became extremely surprised and called out to God, "Heavenly Father! Heavenly Father" from the top of her lungs. But her plea fell on deaf ears.

Then she suddenly realized, "Right! There's also Heavenly Mother!" so she started calling from the top of her lungs, "Heavenly Mother! Heavenly Mother!" Heavenly Father would normally answer her calls with a manly voice, "Oh, yes, my beloved daughter" but this time God spoke in a woman's soft voice, "What's wrong?" So this lady told God, "Heavenly Mother! Please save me. What should I do now that Heavenly Father has abandoned me?" She begged her desperately.

Heavenly Mother then said, "Then wait. I' ll go ask Father." After much time, Heavenly Mother came back and scorned her, "Why didn' t you keep your promise? Heavenly Father is extremely angry at you because your minds changes more than a dozen times a day." Then the lady begged for forgiveness, saying "Heavenly Mother! Please forgive me just this once. I will never do it again." Then she left after saying, "OK. I' ll go ask him again and come right back." Then she, came back and said "Heavenly Father said there was no way for Him to forgive you but He will forgive you just this once because of Heavenly Mother."

Heavenly Mother was surprised. For so long, the humanity has always been asking only for Heavenly Father even though there was Heavenly Mother. Heavenly Mother asked Mrs. Lee, "How did you find me?" and said "Thank you" to her. However, when she listened carefully to the voice of Heavenly Mother, it was the voice of True Mother.

After hearing this story, I always called out "Heavenly Mother!" together with Heavenly Father, and I think the one that gave me the above revelation at the holy ground in East Garden was Heavenly Mother. It is because I felt motherly love.

In other words, I felt the God who was more well-balanced and I called out for Heavenly Mother together with Heavenly Father. I have revealed to you Heavenly Mother so please call for her too when you pray.

It is difficult to describe how warm it feels in my heart when I call for Heavenly Mother together with Heavenly Father. Even Heavenly Mother said "How did you know I existed? Thank you." Please know that there is Heavenly Mother who is so kind and warm.

65

What we must do in the Last Days

Since many decades ago, Father has had a great interest in China. It was because Korea was the Adam nation, Japan the Eve nation, and the China the archangel nation. Father said that God's providence can only be fulfilled when the archangel nation returned to the bosom of God.

Father said many times ' I have to quickly normalize the diplomatic relations between Korea and China.' Mao answered to Kim Il-Sung's call for help and sent 300,000 Chinese soldiers to kill many Korean people. Normalization of the diplomatic relations between these nations was difficult because there was such strong enmity between them. Father worried about this a lot.

Then one day, twenty years ago, a Chinese jet was on its way to North Korea when it crashed into the Kangwon province of South Korea. China was greatly worried that their jet had ended up in the enemy state, and that they wouldn't get their plane back. Also nobody knew what would happen to the pilots. However, the South Korean government treated these pilots well. They gave the pilots good food, took them on tours, gave them a lot of gifts and returned the jets safely. The Chinese government was immensely surprised. They began to feel that Korean people had good hearts.

That served as one of the forces that led to the normalization of diplomatic relationships between the two nations. At that time, Father told us that if we offer sincere *jeongseong* to fulfill the Will, something will happen, such as an accident, that leads to advancement of the providence.

Then there was the 911 in America in 2001. I was working in Washington D.C. and when I turned on the TV, I saw in the news the burning World Trade Center Towers melting like rice candies after planes have crashed into them. 3,000 people died that day and not even their bodies could be recovered.

Muslims think that Bush and the American government contemptuously discriminated against them. At the same time, America was sponsoring a few nations that were hostile towards the nations in Middle East. All these factors fueled their hatred, which led to the suicide-attack. They called it a holy war, a Jihad.

In addition, there was an instance where white Americans beat up and killed a few Muslim youths in return for the violence committed by their people. Americans, who weren't even able to find the corpses of their families and loved ones, put pictures of their dear ones near the site of attack and lit candles in their memory.

Why did such things happened? I would like to give my own interpretation based on Father's Words to which I've been listening. Since long ago, Father has worried about the Arabic nations, or the Islamic nations. The religious names may be different but Judaism, Christianity, and Islam all believe in the same God. These three religions also share a common root; Abraham. However, now these people have become sworn enemies and are killing each other.

The biggest problem is the way in which Muslims witness to people. Muslims do not witness like Christians whose motto is 'Love your enemy. Sacrifice yourself.' Their Bible is The Quran. They welcome those who accept Quran but smite with swords those who don't. So Muslims are similar to Communists. They employ similar methods. Father was thinking "I must embrace these people. How could I do it?" and then the terrorists attack happened.

I had an epiphany regarding the attacks. It must have been that President Bush and other national leaders (the Christians pastors) did not follow Father's Will that such attacks

66

happened. Father went to America and told its people "Help unfortunate people. Live for the sake of African Americans, Native Americans, and poor people." Father always instructed and taught them to be like that but the leaders did not follow Father's directions. That is why the Muslims began to harbor such hatred against these people and ultimately led to the attacks.

Since the attacks, we began to put more effort in peace activities involving various people. One month after the 911 attack, Father gathered thousands of leaders in New York and Washington from the three major religions and spoke to them. He solemnly told them "You must not use violence" but also comforted their heart by saying "You must have been terribly hurt to do such a thing."

Father understood their positions and scorned them; many Muslims cried. Many countries treat them like the enemy but Rev. Moon understood their predicament. Muslims leaders began to come forward to Father after that point.

Father sent many peace ambassadors to The Middle East. Those particular peace ambassadors worked very hard not only in the Arab world but also in Israel. We do not have any enemy. The reason is that Father is the king of peace who brings enemies together. So everyone welcomes whoever comes bearing Father's name.

So I believed that the attack happened for a reason. We do not have anything to worry about in this perspective. People of the world commit despicable things like murder, but we all know them to be a sort of indemnity that advances God's providence. Father also said:

"The Will will be fulfilled without sacrifice only when people believe me and listen to my word. But they end up paying a great sacrifice because they don't listen and they oppose me. God's providence has a schedule for completion therefore God has to force people to sacrifice in order to meet that schedule. That is why my heart aches so much."

The Unification Church members who have entered the Last Days are with no worries because they know this in entirety. Father told us that the members of Unification Church will be the richest people in the world. People of the world lose hope and commit suicide but we never have that situation. When these calamitous Last Days

pass, there will come the age of Father, he said. Everything will be revealed when the age of Father comes. Therefore, the world may frown and scream for their lives but we always remain smiling.

Father said "Guys, you know, my heart feels that this is extremely urgent. I can vividly hear the cries of those who pass onto the spirit world and fall to the pit of Hell." When we went to Hoon Dok Hae in Han Nam Dong, Father used to ask us "Do you hear their voices too?" We had no choice but to answer, "No, we can't hear."

When a landslide happens, many houses become swallowed by the dirt. Father peered into the future and told us that people will come to join the church just like landslides. Father sees things spiritually. Father then asked us "Do you see that too?" But we couldn't see it.

People are becoming confused in the whirlpool of political, economic, and social problems, and they are becoming less and less trusting of one another. They will then come to our church, saying "Let's go to True Parents! That is the only path of survival!" However, they can't come to Father directly so they will come to your house and you must tell them "We all must learn the Principle. Let us do Hoon Dok Hae with True Parents' Words," Educate them in this manner.

That is why we have so many Hoon Dok home churches. Father taught us that we must teach the Principle in the home churches. However, we must open our mouths when we teach people. When many people come to our homes, we should host parties and have rallies, but we need to have our mouths open when we eat. We must not close our mouths. People of the world have no choice but to lose hope and cry, but our members will always be full of hope and vitality.

We must continue to receive Father's Words and teach the Principle and read True

67

Parents' Words even after Father goes to the spirit world. Then as Father said "Everything that is invested with your full heart will all be returned." Everything we have invested will come back to us.

Will not lecturers who teach the Principle to the world will appear first? Those who gave good lecturers will have nothing to envy about in the world. When Father saw Christians constructing big churches, Father said "Do you know why they build such big buildings? It's because they will invite you to their buildings so that you can lecture about the Principle."

Listening to Father's words, I felt a sense of satisfaction was already arising. Our church doesn't have a lot of large buildings, however when I looked at the buildings of The Catholic Church or The Presbyterian church, I felt as if my stomach was becoming full, thinking 'This is where I will give lectures in the future.' so we must study hard to become good lecturers during this opportunity that we now have. We must remember that the Last Days are what God has prepared for us.

68

Jesus laid the foundation for Spiritual Salvation through the Cross

There are two important aspects regarding 'The Messiah: His Advent and the Purpose of His Second Coming.'

One is the problem of salvation through cross and spiritual salvation, and the other is the family of John the Baptist and the family of Jesus.

Korea is a host for many Protestant and Catholic churches. When we look at some of the many apartment complexes here, we see a multitude of red crosses here and there as if they are competing against each other. However, the cross was considered a mere tool for Rome, used to execute members.

That is why the thief to the left and right of Jesus were also put to the cross even though they were not the Messiah. Therefore, the cross itself does not hold much meaning. Rather, it is an eye-sore when we view it as the tool that murdered the Messiah; who came to Earth as the parent of humanity.

That is why the correct thing to do is to remove the cross from church. This is the reason that there is no cross in Unification Church. I heard that many Christian pastors in America, who follow the Words of Father, have already taken down their crosses on top of their churches and buried them in the ground.

According to Father's Words, the cross itself does not have a direct relationship in human salvation. The cross is nothing but a symbol that we must resent and condemn. However, Christians make gold and silver necklaces in the shape of the cross and even kiss them. Christians do such things because they don't understand.

We must now understand salvation through the cross completely. I cringe whenever I see a cross, thinking 'The Jewish people hung the Messiah on that thing.'

But why does the concept of salvation through the cross exist? How did Jesus, who was crucified on the cross, die after at least fulfilling spiritual salvation? To summarize,

this was because Jesus did not condemn the Roman soldiers who stabbed him with their spears but rather forgave them. Jesus tearfully prayed to God, ' Father, they not know what they do. They do not know that their actions today will return to their offspring as great difficulties. Please forgive them."

According to Father's Words, Jesus did not offer the prayer because he was happy. What was there to be happy about? He could not fulfill the mission that he came to fulfill. He was greatly grieved and appalled.

The reason why Jesus offered such prayer was that he understood since he was going to the spirit world without fulfilling God's Will, there would be a second person coming to Earth as the Messiah. Also, Jesus knew that he had to create a stepping stone upon which the new Messiah could come. However, the stepping stone in this Earth upon which the second coming of the Messiah could happen (Abel's *shimjeong*) was not going to be made if Jesus went to the spirit world hating his enemies. The world could receive the second coming only if Jesus loved the enemies. So Jesus offered the prayer which struck Satan at the heart.

Father told us that there was no trace of hatred or a concept of an enemy in God's when he experienced His love. God never hates his enemy. The love of Jesus united with the love of God exists where there is not even a trace of hatred and concept of enemy. There is no excuse which Satan can accuse in the place where the love of God and Jesus are completely united. This is because Satan can never do that. If we want to beat Satan, we have to do what Satan cannot do.

According to Father, God is omnipotent and omnipresent but He can't do anything

69

when Satan accuses him. God became incompetent. Some theologians in America say, "When we look at the Bible, corpses arise from their graves and Jesus promised that he will return on the clouds. Why are these prophecies not fulfilled? It means that God did not keep even one of the promises he made. Maybe God doesn't exist!" Some theologians employ this logic to boldly assert that God is dead. About 40% of the American Christian theologians say this.

What was Satan originally? Satan was originally the archangel and he was not an evil being. The archangel Lucifer was the being who received God's love the most before the creation of Adam and Eve. God love the archangel, and the archangel also loved God in return. When I first joined The Unification Church, I was greatly shocked to hear that "God does not hate the archangel. God cannot hate the archangel."

How did the archangel become Satan? The one who knows the archangel's motivation in becoming Satan better than anyone else is God. The archangel became Satan because of God's love. The archangel was satisfied with being a servant of God, but when he saw God creating Adam and Eve and pouring down the parental love to Adam and Eve, a love greater than the love he was receiving, the archangel felt envy and he wanted to receive that love too. The archangel thought ' If I seduce God's daughter, I can become God's son-in-law, and maybe I will be able to step up to the same position as a son.' As the archangel's motivation for falling was God's love, God cannot hate him.

I once heard a testimony of Hoon Mo Nim about Satan and Dae Mo Nim.

Dae Mo Nim spent her entire life serving True Parents, and raised and offered True Mother to True Father. Dae Mo Nim considered that now that True Parents had arrived and there would be Blessed Families, ' There won't be sin anymore. People will not sin anymore.' However, even Blessed Families continued sinning, and some even went to commit sexual sins. I was beside Dae Mo Nim and watched her praying day and night. Dae Mo Nim practically lived in her ceremonial robe. This was because she would light the candle and scream in her prayers, still to no avail.

So she prayed, "Heavenly Father, please take me to the spirit world quickly." According to Father, Dae Mo Nim could have lived three years longer before she went to the spirit world.

When Dae Mo Nim went to the spirit world, the archangel Lucifer was traveling everywhere to make people do bad things, and the evil ancestor spirits who are being controlled by Satan kept coming down to us to make people sin. This is why Dae Mo Nim made a strong determination to bring the archangel back to God. When Dae Mo Nim approached the archangel and tried to take him to God, he said "No, I can't go. I'm scared." However, the archangel was forced to go to God by Dae Mo Nim; stuck to her like magnet.

When Lucifer came, God saw him and said "Hey, you are here!" not even remembering him as the fallen Satan. God rather said "You came! Welcome! I knew you would come one day so I made a position for you. Please come. You've gone through much suffering because you took someone else's position, right?" Come to think of it, Satan did take someone else's (Adam's) position, right?

When I heard that God said "Yes, I knew you would return to me, longing to have your old position back. Welcome", I was reminded of a Bible verse. In the bible, what did the father of prodigal sons do when his second son came back to him without a penny

left? Wasn't the father overjoyed to see his son for whom he considered dead, giving him his ring and hugging him by the neck?

I asked Hoon Mo Nim, 'Hoon Mo Nim, then what happened to Satan afterwards?' Hoon Mo Nim answered that Satan became very quiet. Therefore Dae Mo Nim has done truly great work. Therefore, the miracles in Cheong Pyeong are happening because of Dae Mo Nim's great contribution and spiritual power upon Father's victorious foundation.

God cannot hate Satan. This is due to the fact that God is well aware of the

70

motivation that led him to become Satan, and even Satan must return to the beloved servant that he once was. The reason Satan accuses people is because he has a grudge and he complains, unwilling to return to God. Therefore, God cannot do anything if Satan accuses. It's as if He becomes incompetent. And the Messiah is the only one who can stop Satan's accusation.

After learning about the concept of Satan, I've realized that the scariest Satan is none other than ourselves. There is the original archangel Lucifer, who is the Satan, and there are many evil spirits who do the bidding of Satan, but we must realize that we ourselves are the scariest Satan. We have inherited original sin from our parents and our ancestors, and if we go deep into the meaning of original sin, selfishness and self-centeredness are at the core.

Father once told us in Han Nam Dong about harboring hatred against others: "If you may blame others, saying 'You hate me. You ignore me. I hate you' that is because you have the elements of hatred and arrogance in you."

Father told us that "If you didn't hate others, then you would see everyone as good people. However, you can't help but to see others in that way because you see them from your own standard." In other words, if we put on a pair of yellow glasses, the world would be covered in yellow, and it would be covered in red with a pair of red glasses. That is why Father told us "Don't judge from your own perspective." He also said that when we realize that the scariest Satan is none other than the self-centeredness in ourselves, we will pity Satan instead of hating him, and we will also develop a sense of sympathy for Satan.

71

The Messiah's abilities and responsibilities

Who can stop Satan's accusations and protect the people from it? Unfortunately, God cannot prevent Satan's accusations. Why is that so? It is because Satan conspired with humans. Therefore, the Messiah has to appear among humanity to uncover the identity of Satan, and accuse Satan, 'Are you not the Satan who has committed various sins?' Satan then will not be able to deny it. That is the Messiah's ability and responsibility.

Satan raped Eve out of his longing for God's love. Even though Satan fell out of his own self-centeredness because he wanted to receive God's love more, Lucifer also hates the 6,000 year-long sinful history which he has caused.

Did Satan himself know how horrible was the sin he committed? Satan did not know it initially. Lucifer, Satan, actually wants to return to his old position of faithful servant of God.

Then who can return Satan to his original position? Only the Messiah can do it. Father's been saying recently, "I did what even God couldn't!" It is because he has stopped Satan's accusation and liberated God.

Father then also said "You will never fully comprehend, no matter how much you study the Divine Principle. There are only three beings who really know the Principle thoroughly; they are God, the Messiah, and Satan. However, even Satan's knowledge of The Principle is limited to the level of the growth stage of completion period because that is when he caused the fall of humans.

I was relieved when I heard this. It is because we can't know the Principle perfectly no matter how often we give lectures. Therefore, we must convey the Principle as it is. Father also told us that we should not mix our words when we give a lecture about the Principle.

Satan knows that God cannot hate him, so Satan speaks even to the Messiah, "Oh, Messiah! God cannot hate me. Therefore, you cannot hate me either. If you are God's son, and if you have come to Earth as His representative, you must want me to return to my old position as God wants me to. If not, I have nowhere to return. Therefore, you cannot hate me." Satan wouldn't let go of the Messiah so easily.

Father's Words regarding this can be seen on page 340 of volume 7 of *True Parents' Life Course*.

"What is the reason God could not subjugate Satan? What is the reason humanity could not subjugate Satan? There is only one reason; one aspect that Satan claims. Satan claims, 'Even though I have fallen, is it not the rule of the Principle and God, therefore

God's son has to love me first before people can enter Heaven from the standard of the Principle?' God could not deny this when Satan made this claim."

God and humans are trapped in Satanic claim ' Those who wish to perfect themselves and enter the Heaven must set the condition that he has loved me. He cannot reach perfection unless he does so.'

Even Father remarked "What's really aggrieving God and the Messiah is the fact that they cannot harm Satan." They cannot attack Satan. They must bring Satan to natural subjugation. Otherwise, Satan accuses, "I am a bad being but you are God, the Absolute One. Therefore, your love must also be eternal, unchanging, absolute, and unique. I am a harmful being, but if you hate me, your love cannot be Absolute Love." Satan knows the Principle.

Sometimes when we report to Father about the persecutions we had to receive from the world, Father says "I want to attack my enemy just like The Mafia." Do you know

72

the Mafia? Originating from Italy, they are formidable and violent gangsters who commit murder, robbery, and drug smuggling. People can't even find the victim's bodies.

God is in such a position where he wants to kill his enemy but he can't. God does not kill his enemy. Father says "God's strategy is to bring his enemies to natural subjugation. Do you think I would try to do anything other than that?" He also says "I wasn't a kind person from the beginning. I had to train myself, bite my tongue when I had to, in order to walk the path of the Messiah even though I was an impatient person with needs for revenge and bad manners!"

That's the Path of the Will. That is why Father is walking the life course of Jesus today. Jesus was able to escape from Satan's accusation because he loved his enemy instead of hating him. Satan took away Jesus's body but he cannot make accusations against Jesus. That is how God was able to utilize his omnipotence to resurrect Jesus.

Had Jesus been crucified on the cross with hatred in his heart, God could not have resurrected Jesus. Through Jesus, who was resurrected by God, we are able to at least receive the spiritual salvation. We cannot talk of the salvation with only Jesus who was crucified on the cross. We must believe in the resurrected Jesus in order to receive spiritual salvation. Father has always been walking the life course of Jesus.

Father has also reclaimed the body of Jesus which was lost at the cross, and he is fulfilling the missions that Jesus was supposed to fulfill with his body.

Have you ever heard the reason why Father wanted to build Panda Motor Co. in China? Father wanted to help China because he had to advance the providence in the archangel nation. China is economically developed now, but the nation was in a bad shape at that time. He told Mr. Moon of the Tongil Industries Co. to give all the possible technologies to China. Then, he instructed Mr. Moon to give all of the profits generated from the company to China after the company was built.

The reason the gap between developed nations and developing nations is widening is due to the fact that developed nations are unwilling to reveal their technologies and monopolize them. Nations like Japan, primarily, do not have much underground natural resources. They live off of the exports of products that they have made with their technologies. They receive a lot of money in patent royalties.

However, they should not do that if we are to realize the world of peace where there is no war. At that time, Tongil Industries also had a mechanical factory in Germany. Therefore, Father told Mr. Moon to gather the technologies in Germany and Japan and give them all to China. Mr. Moon, who has recently passed away, said "But Father! If we give them all our secrets, Tongil Industries won't make any money for the next decade or two."

When he heard this, Father yelled, "Hey! The reason I'm building a car factory in China is not to make money. I do it because I have to bring China to the central position in the providence! All profits generated by the factory must be returned to them! They are atheist who do not believe in God! Would they just believe the existence of God if they were told me? They are hungry so we must feed them first. Then I have to tell them to listen to me. They are bound to come to me once their stomachs become full."

In addition, Father did not try to attack Gorbachev and Kim Il Sung, but rather embraced them with love. Father met them and brought them to a natural subjugation with True Love. The unspoken pain of God and the Messiah is that they can't do anything to Satan even though he is so evil. However, the worldly people kill and wage war against others in order to settle their enmity. The vicious circle is still continuing today.

What is, however, God's strategy? God's strategy is to move Satan's heart and bring him to natural subjugation. Satan's strategy, of forcing people to subjugation, is different from God's strategy. The human history of wars has been that of forceful subjugation and it only begets vengeance. God's strategy of natural subjugation is slow.

However, moving the heart of Satan into natural subjugation is the only path. That's the way to the complete

73

victory.

74

Salvation of glory and salvation of shame

The Bible tells us of two kinds of salvation: salvation of glory and salvation of shame. The salvation of glory (Timothy 2:10) is the salvation that those who have suffered with the Lord will receive, and the salvation of shame (Revelation 6:16) is the salvation that Christians who opposed the Lord will receive when they finally know the Lord.

Those who receive the salvation of shame will return while saying 'Mountains, rocks, cover me! What shall I do with this shame!' Didn't Saul, before he became Paul, for example, try to kill the believers of Jesus before he repented through the miracle of Damascus and returned? (Acts 9:1-30)

Accordingly, many Christians who persecuted the Returning Lord will repent and return in shame, saying 'What shall I do with this shame?' This is what we are working to realize.

Satan did everything as he wished, but God is waiting for the day that Satan surrenders, saying 'I must end this world where I was the king, so please accept me. I will never do it again even if you asked me to.'

Father loved his enemies his entire life

There are three things that Father did when he went to Japan.

First, Father made preparations for the providence, second he studied in school, and third fought he against the Japanese government.

Father said that he took the role of a leader and fought against Japan after making an underground organization during his time in Japan. Father engaged in the independence movement for his nation while searching for God's will, so he used to hold a great enmity against Japanese people.

Back then, anyone who was caught while engaging in the independence movement was tortured in horrible ways. Father told us that one of the tortures he received was being

beaten while being hung by the arms behind him. Ordinary people could not endure such torture.

Every time he received such harsh torture, Father desperately prayed, "Father! I am in Japan in the position of a parent, but the children do not recognize me because I have not fulfilled my responsibility as a parent. However, it is my fault, not theirs. Please forgive your children in Japan." Father did not hate them even for a moment. Father forgave and loved the Japanese people just as Jesus forgave and loved his enemy.

Then in 1942, there was a place called the Imperial Palace in Tokyo where Japan's emperor lived, and there was a bridge called Nijyu-Bashi leading to the palace. Standing on the other side of Nijyu-Bashi, Father offered a desperate prayer, "Heavenly Father! Even though your Japanese children do not recognize me and try to kill me, I do not hate them. In twenty years, your Japanese sons and daughters will kneel before me, subjugated, and I will offer all of them to you."

Afterwards, missionary works in Japan began in 1959, and 20 CARP leaders from Japan came to Korea around 1962. They visited Korea for the first time. I served these CARP leaders also with other members.

As soon as they came through the main gate of the former headquarters church, they took off their shoes, knelt down in front of Father, and cried out, "True Parents.

75

Please forgive the sins our ancestors have committed. We will practice the loyalty and filial piety with our lives for God and True Parents." Their tearful apology made even us cry.

Father was greatly moved, looked to the sky, and said "Yes. The promise I made to heaven during my time in Japan 20 years ago has finally been fulfilled." That's the kind of person Father is.

That was in 1962 so it was exactly 20 years later when this occurred. 1942 was when the Second World War was in full blossom. Even though Father received such harsh tortures from Japanese people, Father forgave them and did not build a barrier in his heart. Father told us that this is the reason Japanese people come running to God's Will simply after listening to the Principle. If Father hated them and held resentment towards them, "You Japanese scoundrels!", then his barrier of hatred would be so elevated that nobody would be able to huddle through the barrier and come to Father.

The reason witnessing in Japan is effective and its church flourishing, and the reason that Japanese people come to Korea to offer their hands in many activities, is that Father built such a foundation of heart when he was in Japan.

We realize how strong Father's true love is when we think about situations like this. Father once told us, "When someone asks me 'How does Rev. Moon live this life?', I will give my answer simply like this: I have lived my entire life sacrificing myself for my enemies who have tried to kill me. I have loved them, and lived for their sake. Father walked the life course of Jesus, and that was the course of loving one's enemy. People of the world were all melted by that.

For this reason, Gorbachev and Kim Il Sung were surprised. Father saw spiritually that their hearts had turned around. That is why when Father told Gorbachev, "Let's meet!" Gorbachev said "Yes!", "Kim Il Sung, let's meet!", Kim Il Sung said "Yes!", and they met True Parents.

Didn't Gorbachev meet Father and say "Rev. Moon, please help me with your international organizations and financial foundation."? Father responded "I am here to help you following God's Will. However, helping you with money is only temporary help. If your nation is to develop eternally, it must believe God. Human strength alone cannot do it. Therefore, liberate religion."

Then Gorbachev liberated religion. Father then told him to tell Kim Il Sung that the unification of Korea must be done through peaceful means, not through violence. Gorbachev answered "Yes." Father also instructed "Leave the youth in your nation to me. They will become great leaders and revive The Soviet Union." So he discovered students who were fluent in English.

University students in Soviet Union can speak English well. I spent ten days with them as well teaching them the Principle. I did this three times and I noticed that they learned the British-style, formal English. When I asked them "Hey, how do you folks speak English so well?", they answered that they must learn the language of their enemy if they are to beat them.

Father initially told 200 students to come, but the number later became 4,000 with everyone rushing. They helped Gorbachev's democratization movement which led Soviet Union to welcome democracy. They have grown up to become today's competent workers and received the blessing of God as His children.

When Father met Kim Il Sung for the first time, Kim Il Sung whispered into Father's ears, "You are a person with no enemy. I have realized that you have sacrificed your life for world peace more than anyone else. I trust Rev. Moon completely. I think the

unification of Korea can be easily be realized if we work together." Then, as if he knew that he would die first, Kim Il Sung asked Father, "If I happen to die before you, please teach my son Jung Il."

I met a few North Korean women myself when I went to China as the president of Women's Federation. When I told them that I was the president of WFWP, they told me "Oh,

76

that's Rev. Moon's organization, yes? We know him well. We respect and love Rev. Moon." They knew it already. Father melted the hearts of the enemy nation with only one project called ' Panda.' They also knew that Father created several other investments for world peace.

There are many false Lords in Korea as well. There was a person claiming that he is the Lord and that Rev. Moon is John the Baptist. When asked why Rev. Moon is John the Baptist, he said that John the Baptist was as famous just as Rev. Moon is now famous. This person is making preparations in hiding without the world noticing him; therefore he is the Lord.

When I met such people during my tour, I reported such people to Father as soon as I could. Then Father said "The Lord must of course receive the calling from God, but what's really important is subjugating communism."

Jesus loved his enemy while he was being crucified on the cross. However, Father fulfilled the mission of Jesus without dying. This is something only Father can do because he knows God's Will and Heart perfectly. Father is the only one capable of waging the war of heart. Such a war of heart exists behind the Principle out of people's sight.

I went through a lot of hardships too when I listened to Father's Words in the early days. At that time, Father never went to bed before midnight. Everytime Father spoke at night, I kept looking at the clock, thinking ' Father should be ending his speech around midnight....' However, Father once continued to speak until 1 and 2 o' clock in the morning. Can you imagine what Father said? He said "I can't stop talking if there is at least one among you who wants me to continue speaking."

Father told us that he must go to bed after midnight. It is because people visit Father by offering *jeongseong*, and most of them offer *jeongseong* after midnight. People normally go to bed before midnight. However, people who seek God offer their *jeongseong* after midnight, so Father has to embrace them.

Father told us if Adam and Eve hadn't fallen, they could have spoken to God at noon and midnight. Heaven's door opens during those times. This was the testimony of Mrs. Seok Cheon Jeong. Mr. Seok Cheon Jeong was the father of Su Won Jeong who a member of the 36-couples.

That is why Father told us that if we are to offer *jeongseong* for something important, we should pray at noon or at midnight. Father considered these two periods in a day very important.

Father stays up late at night, pulling the spiritual strings. Father also told us once "I am talking to you now but do you think that is the only thing that I'm doing right now?" I am offering *jeongseong* so that those who would otherwise join the church ten years join in a year, and those who would otherwise join the church a year from now come knocking at door of our church tomorrow.

I was in Alaska once and there the sunset happens around ten o'clock in the evening. During that time Father slept very little and went out to the ocean to fish at five in the morning everyday without failing.

When Father fished in Alaska, we always waited until it was ten at night. Because it was only then that Father gathered his fishing rods back and returned home. Father departs at ten and the return home took one hour, which meant that he arrived around 11 PM. Father was always looking at the ocean quietly the entire day. I used to wonder what Father was thinking while he was watching the ocean, but Father always looked so peaceful as if he was sitting inside of his living room.

I didn't know Father's heart but this is what Father told me one day.

"Hey, you think I'm just catching fish on the boat? When I'm in the middle of the ocean on a boat, fish come and tell me 'Father, please stay with us longer.' and the spirits of heaven come down too, and all creation play with each other and I become drunk in their

77

happiness."

He said that the ocean water and air, and even the heaven, become joyous. Then

countless spirits would come to Father and tell him while crying, 'I am someone who drowned in the ocean at such hour on such day. Please liberate me.'" Father listens to all their pleas and liberates them. All the while, he plays with the creation and fish as well.

Father has kept very busy. We do not know this well because we can't truly see. We were only angry when fish didn't bite the bait.

It's difficult to tell how quickly the hours pass by when we serve Father closely. We also don't become tired. Maybe we enter the dominion of Father, our physical selves being led by Father's spirit self.

78

John the Baptist failed to serve Jesus

John the Baptist knew that Jesus was born of his father and Mary. This information is not revealed in *The Exposition of Divine Principle*. Father told Hyo Won You, "Don't write about anything that is not in the Principle unless I give you permission."

We received a lot of persecution in the early days because what we said about John the Baptist. Korea is predominantly Presbyterian whereas America is Methodist. In The Methodist Church, the highest respect is reserved for John the Baptist. He is the saint among all saints. It is no wonder why there was such commotion once we taught that John the Baptist failed to do his responsibility. The Methodist church takes the saying of John the Baptist, "He must increase, but I must decrease." as that he was only being humble.

We interpret this differently. We interpret that John the Baptist failed to do his responsibility, so Christians become angry. They will become even more angry if they hear that the younger sister of John the Baptist was supposed to be the wife of Jesus. They will be enraged if Zechariah if they hear that the father of John the Baptist, is the father of Jesus.

Father told about this to the Japanese women who joined in a sisterhood pact with Korean women.

John the Baptist was born six months before Jesus. He is, therefore, the older brother of Jesus. The Jewish people considered John the Baptist great because he lived an ascetic life, eating locusts and wild honey. However, after close inspection, John the Baptist realized that Jesus was born between his father and his aunt, Mary. In this way, John the Baptist could not truly believe and serve Jesus who was proclaiming himself as the Messiah.

Even though she was in the position to become Adam's wife, Eve was in the position of Adam's younger sister. However, the archangel who was in the position of a servant, stole Eve. Therefore, Jesus, who was in the position to take the opposite course in the

restoration through indemnity, had to steal the sister from John the Baptist who was in the position of the archangel. Christians will jump up and down in anger when they hear this.

Zechariah became mute when he first heard from an angel that his wife was pregnant with John the Baptist. He doubted the angel's words because his wife was too old. Do you think the younger sister of John the Baptist was born? The younger sister of John the Baptist did not play any role in the providence, and we cannot even find a trace of her name in the Bible. Jesus knew the course that he had to take and begged his mother three times in his life, at 17, 27, and 30 years old, to be wedded with the younger sister of John the Baptist. However, Mary turned down her son's plea completely.

Mary was a single woman when she became pregnant. Therefore, Jesus was a bastard and was in a low position. That is why the Jewish people even today scoff when somebody tells them that Jesus was the Messiah.

I went to the land of Jewish people in 1980, and they had what is called the Wailing Wall. It is the western portion of the Holy Temple that King Solomon constructed, and the Jewish people with their bread-shaped black hats were reciting the Laws of Moses. When I approached them and asked "Do you think Jesus was the Messiah?" they answered "No!" They say that they respect Jesus as a prophet, but nobody could be the Messiah since Elijah has not appeared from the sky yet. It's truly amazing.

They are same as the Christian people of today. It must have been very difficult for them to believe that Jesus was the Messiah in that kind of circumstance. I could understand this better when I was sent there. Mary gave birth to Jesus after receiving the revelation, and Jesus was able to survive with the protection of Joseph, and therefore he was a righteous

79

person. The Jewish law at the time stated that unmarried women who become pregnant must be stoned to death. However, was Mary not saved because Joseph told people that the baby was his? Mary, who knew the law of Jews, must have been very scared.

Jesus was the half brother of John the Baptist. The younger sister of John the Baptist had the same father as Jesus. Mary was aware of everything. If she had allowed Jesus to marry his half sister, it would once against repel the Jewish law. Mary opposed Jesus being wedded to the younger sister of John the Baptist, and Mary is now beating her chest, lamenting that she did not allow the marriage of Jesus.

Jesus and Mary were abandoned by Zechariah's family. The three-year public course of Jesus was his journey to find his wife, and he was killed without being able to fulfil that mission. Father taught us that if John the Baptist's younger sister believed Jesus to be her husband and followed him wherever he went, then heaven could have protected them, preventing the crucifixion of Jesus.

Father said that Jesus was murdered because he could not set the condition with which heaven could protect him. The crucial reason for the crucifixion of Jesus lied in John the Baptist. Jesus was the Abel family and John the Baptist was the Cain family. However, because the Able family and Cain family failed to unite, the tribes couldn't unite, the races couldn't unite, and Jesus was crucified in the end. This lies in the deepest fathom of the Principle, and this is something serious we must solve in this day and age.

I can tell you this now because Father has already proclaimed these things. Father said that "*The Exposition of Divine Principle* that I told Mr. Hyo Won You to write was only a portion of the Principle that I knew." The reason Father could not reveal the entire Principle was because of the oppositions from Christians and theologians. Father said that he will write the Original Divine Principle when the time comes. I recall Father saying this.

These days, I see that the contents of the Principle are coming out more and more. I told Father once, "Father once said that you will write the Wollli Wonbon again, but I think many of the contents of the Wollli Wonbon have already come out in Mother's speeches that she'd given on her tours." Father sat still after saying 'Yes, I think what you are saying is also right.' Just like this, new Words are being revealed as the time comes.

80

The root of the Unification Church faith

We cannot give perfect Principle lectures with only *The Exposition of Divine Principle*. We must listen to Father's Words often and read the collected speeches of Father from the first volume if we want to give good Principle lectures. Father used to talk a lot about the circumstances and the heart of Jesus from the first volume of Father's Collected Speeches (Father's Words in 1956) until he had the Holy Marriage with Mother.

When Dr. Bo Hi Park joined the church, he was the first person to use a recording device to start recording Father's Words. Father's Words were normally written down as notes before recording devices. Father used to talk about the excruciatingly painful

heart of Jesus, connecting the hearts of God, Father, and Jesus, and speaking until his entire body was covered in his own sweat and tears.

I also told my youngest son "You have to start reading from the first volume of Father's Speech Collection", and he began reading. After he started reading Father's Speech Collection, he told me that he now feels like he can realize the base of the faith of The Unification Church.

We cannot use only the Principle in our ministry. We also cannot use only the Words that we receive daily. We can convey the inspiration of God only when we lecture centering on the Principle and Father's Words. In other words, we must first thoroughly study the Principle, and then read from the first volume of Father's Speech Collection which is the root of the faith of Unification Church. We have to turn Heaven's lonely, sorrowful, and painful heart into our own root of faith and assimilate the Words that Father has given us today.

Give lectures through reading the Principle means that lecturers are discouraged from combining their own words into their lectures. In other words, we should speak according to the Words, and nothing else. We can easily find Father's Words regarding certain points in the Principle as we read the Principle through. We can engraft the Principle in people's hearts if we add Father's Words just a little in the Principle, and anyone will be able to accept the Principle.

I believe this book 'A Testimony to God's Word in Regard to Divine Principle' will help you in your study and lectures of the Divine Principle.

81

Chapter 5 Resurrection

Resurrection of the People on Earth

The chapter of Resurrection first deals with the providence of resurrection for people on Earth. How will the providence of resurrection for people on Earth happen? Our spiritual selves must attain the stage of divine spirit after going through the stages of form spirit and life spirit. In other words, we must experience the resurrection on the formation, growth, and completion levels.

The next part deals with the providence of resurrection for people in the spirit world. Our ancestors who have already shed their physical bodies, along with other spirits, must attain resurrection through cooperating with people on Earth and receive the same benefit. I will explain about these two things.

I originally knew resurrection as ‘ the dead arising from their graves’ just as Christians churches teach. However, I heard that ‘ resurrection means the growth of our spirit bodies’ for the first time when I joined the church. I was so amazed by this teaching and asked Father about it to find out more.

"Father, my spirit self must be growing inside of my physical self just as you have said, would there be a means of measurement, like a thermostat, to know how much my spirit body has grown, whether it can achieve the level of divine spirit?" I asked. However, Father pretended he didn’ t hear me that just said "Yes. The perfection of spirit self is the perfection of love!"

However, the term ‘ form spirit’ has a meaning.

There was a member in our church who died of carbon-monoxide poisoning and then came back to life. When he went to the spirit world, the path leading to Hell looked easier than the path that was leading to heaven. There were also people at the other end of the path of hell waving him, telling him to come and join them. So when he went to hell, there were beings that resembled serpents, dogs, and pigs. They looked like humans from one point of view but animals from another.

It means that only when we attain the resurrections, our spirit self can grow from the shape of animal to become the shape of human being. That is why the spirit self at the formation stage is called form spirit. That particular form spirit develops to the level of a life spirit, and it will ultimately become a divine spirit. A divine spirit illuminates light. So the purpose of our life on Earth is to perfect our spirit self in order to become divine spirit (luminous being). Everyone wishes to become a divine spirit.

The level of luminosity determines how close we can go to True Parents after they go to the spirit world. We will be able to go closer to True Parents depending on the brightness of our spirit selves. We will fall down according to the darkness of our spirit selves and ascend according to their brightness.

Perfection of spirit self is the perfection of love

Father explained to us about resurrection of spirit self as if drawing a picture. Father taught us that God has twelve sunsangs. Then he told us "Everyone is born with one of the

82

twelve sunsangs of God. Therefore, it is easy for you to love and become friendly with people who share the same sunsang with you, but it’s difficult to love the others

who have the other eleven sungangs. Therefore, you must work for them, sacrifice for them, and love them. In the end, you will have to love everyone who has the other eleven sungangs. If you can love them all, your spirit self will become completed, and your character and love will be perfected."

If we look at the picture here, it has four directions. East means warm spring, South means summer, West autumn, and North winter. Each season has three months. Three months multiplied by four seasons is twelve months.

You have probably heard that there are twelve gates made of pearls in the spirit world. People are all different and they are bound to go through the pearl gate that befits them. Since there are twelve sungangs and twelve months, there are twelve pearl gates as well.

If we only befriend the people of same sungang as us on the physical world, we will only be able to enter one pearl gate. We will not be able to enter the other pearl gates. If you hate a certain type of person, then you will not be able to enter the corresponding gate. As twelve months are different from each other, twelve types of people are all very much different.

Our spirit self cannot be perfected and become a luminous body if we cannot unite with all twelve types of people. The twelve pearl gates represent the gates which twelve types of people enter. Therefore, if we cannot love certain types of people, our spirit self will have a shadow cast upon it and be tainted with darkness. We must learn to like all twelve types of people if we are to pass through all twelve months.

That's why the number 12 is important. True Parents gave birth to more than twelve children. The first thing Father asked Mother to do after the Holy Marriage is that she must give birth to more than twelve children. Mother gave birth to fourteen children.

People's characteristics are all different just as four seasons are different. You could say 'You and I have different characters; we don't fit well together' but you would be breaking the heavenly law of love if you said 'You and I have different characters; I hate you.' How could the spring hate summer, and the summer hate autumn? We need all four seasons. Therefore, whether people have the same characteristic as you or not, you must love them all.

So when you give birth to twelve children, people you meet will remind you of your first daughter or second son and so on, making it easier for you to be friendly with them.

There is a saying: ' You must be like a child if you are to enter heaven.' It is because children are kind. Children easily play with each other. Adults aren't able to that. Adults measure each other up and they take along time to become friends. That's how adults are. Those who transcend everything and just love everyone will be able to go to heaven. We are being trained in that way of love on Earth.

Father said that the Principle will become the constitution in the nation of God in the future. The world where people cannot commit sin even if they try to, will arrive.

However, who will be the people who fail to achieve resurrection until the end? It is the people who never gave birth. You cannot simply study the loving heart of parent and realize it. The loving heart of parent is something we can only learn through having our own children, sacrificing ourselves for them day and night, and raising them. Therefore, Father said that the people who never gave birth to their own children will have a harder time for resurrection. Then what can they do? They must adopt children. Father's been pushing the wives of the four saints to adopt children.

Back in the old days, I was inside the room where Father was having a meeting with pastoral leaders. They asked Father "There are members who are avoiding getting pregnant because of financial restraints. Would that be OK?" Father yelled and said "What are you

83

talking about? They should have more children! Do you think Jacob would've given birth to a son like Joseph, his eleventh son, if he avoided getting his wife pregnant?" Then Father continued "Give birth. Father gave birth to a lot of children as well. You must learn from it. Don't worry, just give birth. Babies come out to the world with their own fortune."

You should also give birth to a lot of children, and if you couldn't, please tell your daughters or daughters-in-law the same thing. Father once told us that if we have 100 million second generation children, we will be able to have dominion over the whole world. That is why Father also said that he is always so happy to hear blessed families giving birth. So please do not worry about with what you will feed the children.

Please remember that the number 12, twelve children are important.

84

Ancestors are directly connected to individual salvation

Father normally doesn't do this anymore but there was something he always used to say after someone reported to him, "Who did well here, and who did poorly? Something bad happened to someone, something good happened to someone." Father used to say, "That happened to him because he had good ancestors. That happened to him because he had bad ancestors." Father often blamed the ancestors.

When I was in The Presbyterian Church, I thought I had nothing to do with my ancestors. I simply believed that the ancestors who didn't believe in Jesus were all satanic. So we didn't hold ancestral rites. However, Father taught us differently; Father often spoke about ancestors.

Father said that everything is connected to our ancestors. Our birth is connected with the ancestors, and the way we live is also connected with our ancestors. When people die, their ancestors come to take him. When people are just about to depart from the Earth, they say "My grandfather, my grandmother are here to take me." It also happens to be that our ancestors are the ones who will teach us the way of life in the spirit world. Therefore, if our ancestors are in a good place, we will end up in a good place as well. The opposite is also true, if our ancestors are in a bad place, then we will end up in that place as well. That's how important our ancestors are.

I asked about ancestors to Father one day.

"Father, according to your words, you told us that the cooperation from our ancestors is vital in our lives. Then is it our ancestors or God who give us salvation? Between God and our ancestors, who cooperates with us more?"

"Hmmm. God saves us in whole, but ancestors have more to do with direct individual salvation."

According to Father's Words, we must have good ancestors, and we also have to become good ancestors to our descendants. The good deeds done by our ancestors cannot be taken by God or Satan. Father talked a lot about the good deeds of ancestors.

Father said that we resemble our father and mother, and also our grandparents, but we do not just resemble their appearance, we have also inherited their cells. Our ancestors live together with us. We inherit the sins and good deeds of our ancestors. We can understand the relationship between ourselves and our ancestors after joining the Unification Church and listening to lectures on the Principle. Even if our lives are difficult at the moment, we can't become reproachful after we come to know the Principle.

The reason why Cheongpyeong is so great is that we liberate the ancestors in the spirit world and send them to the training center led by Heung Jin Nim. They train there for one hundred days, receive the blessing, and then become Absolute Good Spirits. Then we must bring them to our home, live together with them, and let them cooperate with us. If we make 1,000 Absolute Good Spirits, that means we have 1,000 spiritual children. When we go to the spirit world, they will come to welcome your arrival, "Oh! Our spiritual Father, or Mother, you have come. Welcome to the spirit world. We will serve you well."

Then, blessing 2,000 Absolute Good Spirits is better than blessing 1,000, and blessing 10,000 is considerably better. That is why Father once said "Do the members of Unification Church know how grateful they should be for the works of Cheongpyeong?" If we have made many Absolute Good Spirits, we won't go to hell at least, right?

So in the end, what matters is where our ancestors are coming from. If they come from hell, we will end up going to hell. If they come from a good place, we will follow them and go there as well.

85

The life of people on Earth and the good deeds of ancestors

The spirit world is a world of cause. We who live on earth are living in the world of result. There is no result without a cause. Therefore, we can't escape the influence of our ancestors even though we want to live our lives the way we wish.

Father once explained to us about how the good deeds of our ancestors can operate. I've drawn a picture to help you understand. Here are a high and medium height mountains, and there is a valley between them. The person standing on the mountain will be called A, the one in the valley, B, and the one on the medium mountain C. A's ancestors did many good deeds.

In climbing the mountain for 6,000 years, some people are still at the level of Old Testament, some at the level of New Testament, and some at the Holy Testament.

This sun represents the grace of God which sheds its light equally. Who do you think will receive the most amount of God's grace? It will be A of course. A has a easy life since he receives God's grace during his lifetime. He doesn't have to live his life so diligently thanks to the good deeds of his ancestors.

Person B is in the valley because his ancestors did very few good deeds. He works hard and diligently but only few work out for him. His life is a difficult one. He may be smart and live his life sincerely but still nothing works out for him as he wishes. In the valley he resides, the sun shines for a very short time before it disappears, shedding only small amount of light on him.

Also, person C is in the middle of the mountain, whose ancestors accomplished approximately a medium amount of good deeds.

However, I heard something very shocking from Father recently. Father said "Do you know why God is fair? He is fair because there are rich people and poor people." Those well-off deserve to live in riches because of the good deeds of their ancestors, and those live in suffering must lead such a style of life because they must pay off the debt of their ancestors.

When we see one person (A) living well-off even though he doesn't have much talent whereas another person (B) living in difficulties even though he tries very hard, we call it unfair. However, Father's perspective is different. That's not unfair. Our position in this world is different from our birth. There is really no reason to be jealous of someone because everything works out for that person; meanwhile your life is so difficult. If you find yourself jealous in such a way, just think ' Oh, I must live harder to make up for the lack of good deeds by my ancestors' and I must work harder.

If this person (B) finds the Principle and joins the church, he will realize that his ancestors left him only few good deeds, and he will begin to work harder. His status elevates as he works harder. Father also told us that such people achieve the most elevation after they find the Principle. As God is the parent of humankind, Father told us that God listens to the prayers and the *jeongseongs* of such people more closely. That is why such people achieve astonishingly fast development.

86

People on Earth must indemnify the sins of seven generations of their ancestors

This time, I will draw a bamboo stick. Here is the bamboo tree and this picture represents one section of the bamboo stick. In this one section, there are seven generations of ancestors.

Father said that the sins of our ancestors in the spirit world are indemnified every seven generations. It moves up one step every seven generations. Father already knows about the ancestor liberation in the Cheongpyeong training center. So the horizontal seven

generations are tuned to this vertical side first, second, third, fourth, fifth, sixth, and seventh generations.

According to Father's Words, we joined the Unification Church because of the good deeds of our ancestors up to seven generations. We inherit the good deeds of our ancestors up to seven generations and we benefit from that.

We are the descendants of the first, second, third, fourth, fifth, sixth, and seventh generation ancestors who were fallen people. We therefore are the embodiment of both good and evil.

So this (♫) is good and that(♭) is evil. This person (the seventh descendant) has his own goodness and then received all the goodness of his ancestors. The good deeds of his ancestors have come down in such a way. So when you look at this person, he is even kinder than his father or his grandfather. He is born as a better person.

Father once told us many years ago, "You people are probably loved and trusted the most among your siblings. You couldn't have joined Unification Church otherwise. Who among you received the trust and love of your parents and siblings the most? Raise your hand!" I raised my hand too. I was the first child among six brothers and sisters, and I received the love and trust of my parents the most.

However, how good would it be if we were to live only with their good deeds? Nothing's free. We also inherit the bad deeds from our ancestors and we must make indemnifications for it.

When our ancestors gave their good deeds to us, they gave them to us with a condition of making indemnifications for their sins. When we look at the members of Unification Church, they are such kind people but many of their lives are very hard. They experience much difficulty because they are trying to pay back for the sins of their ancestors.

Father puts us through many difficulties so that we can quickly pay back for the sins of our ancestors. Father does that because anything we fail to pay back will be inherited to our descendants. Then our descendants will have to continue making indemnifications.

We must endure all difficulties if we know the Principle and clearly know the relationship between ourselves and our ancestors. When we are faced with difficulties in our lives, we should consider that 'I am in suffering because I am making indemnifications for the sins of my ancestors. I am suffering because the payment can be made quicker.' Our indemnifications will be finished faster if we are grateful for our sufferings.

The members of the Unification Church normally live difficult lives because they have to make indemnifications for the sins of their ancestors. As they have received all different sorts of fortunes from their ancestors, both good and bad, their life is often very difficult. So even though our lives may be difficult, we must walk a the painful course, thinking that we are paying for the sins of seven generation of our ancestors as their servant ,and ending the payment in our generation.

We can now make indemnifications for the sins of 210 generations of ancestors thanks to the special ancestral liberation in Cheong Pyeong. This has become possible through the grace of True Parents' victory. We must be grateful to True Parents.

She has now passed away but there lived a grandmother in Daegu who practiced

87

oriental medicine and was also good at face-reading; knowing things about people by analyzing their faces. She analyzed the faces of many high position leaders of our church, and she said that they are mostly very kind but many of them have the fate of committing suicide, getting killed in a car accident, or other situations preventing them from living to their natural age. People who are destined to die before their natural years come join the Unification Church, she said. She said she couldn' t understand why such kind people have such difficulties lying ahead in their lives.

She also said that as such people, we were able to avoid such misfortune because we joined the church and decided to follow True Parents. Such knowledge can also be found in the Principle. It says that we are the fruit of our ancestors of 6,000 years.

The members of Unification Church must go through suffering and receive persecution. We say we have received persecutions after joining the church and Father understands it all when he sees us. Father knows how many good deeds our ancestors have done.

Additionally, Father's been saying lately that he can see numbers on our foreheads. This number does not disappear even after 40 years from joining the church. Numbers appear like 5 years, 10 years, 15 years, or 20 years..... Then when a woman comes to the matching place with her head down, covering her forehead, Father shouts "Put your head up. I can' t see your ancestors."

The numbers on our foreheads mean that our ancestors have pushed us to join the Unification Church and we will stay active in the church activities, but then after that time, our bad ancestors pull us to their side.

Some members receive the blessing after they get married outside the church. They joined the church before they got married, but then left the church for a reason, and return to church with a man or a woman at their side to receive the blessing. Father told us that these are all works of our ancestors. That becomes their regret. These blessed couples give birth to their children outside the church, and breathe the sigh of regret when they can't give birth once they enter the church because now they are too old.

Then why do such things happen? It's because if we are allowed to stay in the church for five years. After 5 years, the bad ancestors will start to pull us out. Even though they are aware that they will receive salvation if we join the church and offer *jeongseongs*. However they are ashamed of being judged for their crimes and the fear they felt when they committed their sins creep in back to them. In fear of being judged for their crimes, they begin to want to escape and pull their descendants out.

Even though it's possible to be pulled out by our ancestors after 5 or 10 years, we can stay in the church without being forced out by the temptation of our bad ancestors if we have offered the *jeongseongs* of our own. Otherwise, what once inspired our hearts will give us scars, our faith in the providence of God will decrease, our relationship with other members will begin to crack, and we will begin to hate other members. Then we will be pulled out by our bad ancestors.

Then our good ancestors try again to push us back to the church. Then our good ancestors and bad ancestors begin to fight. This fight will ensue for 40 years. After 40 years, the number on the person's forehead disappears.

Father said that this is why he can truly trust a member once it's been 40 years since he joined. When Mrs. Hyeon Shil Kang told Father "It's been 40 years since I've joined the church." Father gave his blessing and told her "Congratulations. Things will now work in favor of you. Your wishes will come true."

If we are to repel the hands of our bad ancestors trying to pull out of the church, we must love and serve True Parents, and offer *jeongseong* for the Will of God for more than 40 years.

88

The merit of our ancestors and witnessing

I will explain it to you this time with some drawings of humans. Father taught this to us in a very fun way. After listening to all of Father's lessons, it becomes easier for us to understand the relationship between ourselves and our ancestors no matter how difficult a situation we find ourselves in.

Here is a drawing that resembles a person. In this drawing, the spirit world is the cause and the physical world is the result. This result is always affected by its cause. Then, this is those who have joined the Unification Church. We make different relationships centering on this particular person (the other person). We live among many relationships that we create.

For example, when I try to witness to this person (the other person), our meeting is not only a meeting between us but a meeting of our ancestors. It may not be seen but your ancestors are there with you. The ancestors without physical bodies must borrow the physical bodies of their descendants in order for them to benefit, and that is why they always follow their descendants.

If we offer sincere *jeongseong* in order to witness to this particular person (the other person), then this person's ancestors feel grateful towards me. Then, this person's ancestors must repay the debt to my ancestors. This happens automatically. However, we must also understand that, even though we have joined the church, our ancestors may not necessarily have done better deeds than the ancestors of this person to whom I am trying to witness.

In other words, I have joined the Unification Church and this person (the other person) has not joined the church yet, but the average good deeds of my ancestors (C) may not be higher than that of this person's ancestors (D). For example, if the average good deeds of my ancestors is 50% (C), it could be that the ancestors of the person you are trying to witness has 70% (D) of good deeds. In that case, witnessing becomes difficult. It is because ancestors send their descendants to the Unification Church when the time is right.

Then why did the 36-couple families have to join the Unification Church so early and had to go through so much suffering while following the Lord? There are two reasons. There are people who joined the church because their ancestors (A) did a lot of good deeds.

Father said that the ancestors whose good deeds are recognized by God among other people are those who were loyal to their countries. There is no ancestor who can surpass the ancestors who were loyal to their countries. Next comes the ancestors who were good sons and daughters, then comes the ones who were good husbands, and wives, then comes the ones who believed in a religion.

Why is that? Even though it wasn't the nation of God, the ancestors who were loyal to their countries had to sacrifice themselves and their families for the sake of their nations. For this reason, upheld highest by God are those who have loyally sacrificed themselves for the sake of their nations.

According to Father, soldiers who die in a war, or soldiers who are sacrificed in an incident such as the Cheon An Ham sinking can ascend to high places when they go to the spirit world. Father told us that even if they remained on Earth and worked very hard, they could not have done anything that would have put them in a higher place in the spirit world than their sacrifice for the nation. Father also said that even though they have gone to very high places in the spirit world, there are still even higher places they can go, so they will come back to Earth, to their family members or tribal members, and help them sacrifice

89

themselves for the sake of their nation. If they succeed, they will go to even higher places in the spirit world together with the people they helped. They assist their close ones to achieve the level of sacrifice for their nation; this is something they weren't able to achieve when they were alive.

Father then told us that we need not worry too much about the soldiers who were sacrificed for the sake of this nation when we know what will await for them in the spirit world. If you know someone close to you whose intimate loved ones sacrificed themselves for the nation, please give them your condolences and cheer them up.

Furthermore, God also wants to have his own family. God does not have a family on Earth. However, God is moved by those good sons or daughters who overcome much hardship to attend their parents on Earth. Also, God highly regards those who kept their fidelity for their spouse. Father said that 36-couple family members have such people in their ancestral line.

It could also be that our ancestors who have done a lot of good deeds could be in a very high position whereas our ancestors who have done many bad things could be at a low place or even in hell. Those ancestors who are at a higher place in the spirit world want to quickly save their own tribal members who are at a lower place or in hell. Wouldn't you want to save your own members from lower places in the spirit world or hell?

That is why even when the blessed family members go to higher places in the spirit world, we will still feel pain. People are one body with their tribal members, so it is never comfortable for those, even in a higher place, when some of their tribal members are suffering in lower places. Father said to us, "If you do not restore your tribe, you will never feel that you are in a good place no matter how elevated a place you find yourself in the spirit world." That is why Father told us to become tribal messiahs.

Similarly, even if our ancestors have done a lot of good deeds and went to a good place in the spirit world, they are eager to save their tribal members who are suffering in hell.

This is why they push their descendants to join The Unification Church as one of the 36-couple members. What then happens? All of the ancestors can't be redeemed just because there are few ancestors with many good deeds. Since the sins of the ancestors are so great, they can't ascend to a higher place right away.

I will give you an example. It is just as you see your report card and see that you receive an A or B in the subjects that you like, but you receive lower grades in other subjects which then work to bring down the average score.

We can tell where our ancestors are in the spirit world by looking at these things. Just as our average grade would be low even if we received good grades in some subjects but bad grades in others, this person (the other person)'s ancestors(B) may not have many good deeds but their average would still be somewhere in the middle (D). Therefore, the average good deeds of the ancestors (D) would go up just as subjects with similar grades would bring the average upward. Then such people don't need to join the church so early on. Those who joined the church at its early period have to go through more suffering. Then the ancestors would force their descendants to stay in the church until they feel like they've had enough. That is why territorial behavior cannot be found in Unification Church.

Father wanted to buy us small presents but he took us to the Nam Dae Mun market because he didn't have much money. When we went to the Nam Dae Mun market, there were so many people that we kept bumping into others. When we came back to the headquarters church, Father said "I saw a lady who had very good ancestors. I was so happy that I almost tried to shake her hand." I thought "But her ancestors still couldn't have been better than our ancestors who joined the church."

However, Father also told us once "Families who joined the church after they get married sacrifice themselves even more for the Will of God." We should not look down upon members just because they were married outside the church. When the donation providence

90

started in Japan, many Japanese members who made great contributions were wedded outside the church. People like us didn't have much to give because we already sacrificed so much.

When I had a chance to look at these families who were wedded outside the church, they looked all very handsome. However, 777-couple and 1800-couple members were full of wrinkles like elderly folks. The couples married before they joined the church

are like the fence of our church. Please be proud of that. We joined the church first and received more persecution. We were helped by the ancestors who had lots of good deeds to join the church first and also so that we can resurrect a greater number of ancestors who are in lowly places.

(See the picture on the right)

If the good deeds of the ancestors(70%) of the person that I am trying to witness to is higher than the good deeds of my ancestors(50%), their ancestors try to prevent their descendant from joining the church. If this person is to join the church, their ancestors have to give a bit of their good deeds(10%) to my ancestors. But they must come down to a lower position in the spirit world if they did that.(70%-10%=60%) But they don't want to come down. Being at a high position in the spirit world means that they will receive God's love more, they will shine more, and they are in the position where they are happier. They naturally don't want to come down. So they grab their descendant by the hand, and tell the person "Don't go. If you go there, we have to repay the debts of the ancestors of the person who witnessed to you."

When that's the circumstance, that particular person will not join the church no matter how hard you try. When you feel as if the good deeds of your ancestors are out done by the good deeds of the ancestors of the person to whom you are trying to witness, then you must offer sincere *jeongseong* in the heart of repaying the debts of your ancestors(G). If the amount of *jeongseong* goes beyond the amount of good deeds of that other person's good deeds, then any repayment becomes unnecessary because your ancestors have now have more good deeds. Then that person's ancestors will let their descendant go. Father told us that there is no bargaining when it comes to the ancestors in the spirit world. It is very precise.

Father once told us in the past that we must treat our guests the best way possible. Only then the ancestors of our guest and our own ancestors in a high place in the spirit world can relate to each other. Korean people know this well because they are spiritually bright. Korean people have the unconscious urge to be good to their guests even though their own living standard is low because that is what their ancestors in the spirit world want.

When we meet someone, when we become friends with someone, when we marry someone or when we make any human relationship with others, it means that our ancestors and their ancestors meet together. It can't be avoided because the spirit world is the cause and the Physical World is the result. We strive to live our lives according to our own liking but the reason why that does not work is that we must repay the debts incurred by the sins of our ancestors.

The way to restore the sins of ancestors through indemnification

We are talking about the sins of ancestors here. The sins of ancestors can be categorized through the order of which they fell, and that became our ancestor's debt.

What does it mean by debts of ancestors? Father said that there are three different types of debts according to the order of the fall.

The first is the debt of *shimjeong*, ie. the sin of *shimjeong*. This comes from the spiritual fall. The spiritual fall is where the first love of Eve was taken. Love is the problem in the end. In our human society, there are many conflicts that are aroused due to the complication with love.

Second, we find the debt of physical body. This comes from the physical fall. Approximately 80 percent as to why our physical bodies weakens, becomes diseased, and experiences suffering is due to our ancestors having done physical harm to others or having committed sins of that nature. Father said that physical suffering is a phenomena resulting from that.

Third is the failure to have dominion over all things. It means that we human beings have debts owed to all things. That is why we suffering from financial difficulties.

Because Adam and Eve became husband and wife through the illicit love, which God did not allow in any way, they have failed to fulfill the blessing of having dominion over all things after perfecting themselves. As a result they ended up having to use all things through stealing them. That is why in the book of Rome 8:22, all things groan in pain.

Human beings had to go through much suffering because they failed to pay the indemnify for these three debts. God wants to have these three things and Satan also wants to have these three things. We human beings have also considered these three things as important.

What will humans need more if their problems of love, health, and material are all solved. Wouldn't it be a fulfilling life to live in happiness, good health, and have a small abundance of material?

Then how can we pay the indemnification for the sins of our ancestors? Since the fall happened in this order(❶❷❸), the restoration must take the opposite course like

this(123). The order is reversed. 1 is material restoration, 2 witnessing, and 3 is blessing.

We must restore the economy first; that is the reason we tithe. Economic restoration means that, just as God first created all things in the environment in which Adam and Eve could live in abundance, we must first restore all things that Satan has stolen and create the environment in which we can re-create ourselves. Only then we can be re-created.

Next comes the witnessing of fallen humans since we lost our physical bodies due to the physical fall.

Third is the problem of love. If we are to fundamentally eradicate original sin and restore our lineage to that of God, we must receive the blessing. We personally have to receive and we must lead other people to receive the blessing as well.

Father told us, "I must bless the whole 7 billion people in the world before I go to the spirit world. Only then, we must sever the lineage of Satan and be restored to the lineage of God, and only then the Ideal World can be established." Father said that this is Father's mission. However, how difficult would that be? Father said that he still has to accomplish it.

Two people will have difficulties in their relationships if these(①②③) become their problems. If my ancestors brought harm to this person's ancestors in the form of love,

92

health, or economy, then my ancestors become the perpetrator and the other person's ancestors become the victim. Therefore, the descendants of this victimized ancestors keep harassing me with these problems. Then we will feel that this person is our enemy.

However, Father said such a person is not our enemy but our teacher. Why is that so? It is because we were oblivious to the sins of our ancestors but thanks to this person, we can now realize, ' Oh, my ancestors had committed sins to your ancestors.' That is why we must love our enemy. If you wave off your enemy, if you simply avoid your enemy and leave them, your ancestors sins will not be indemnified. If you don't make the indemnification, your descendants will have to make the payment. That is why we must be good to those who harm us and we should be more good to the enemies than to the people who be good to us.

For example, when a beggar comes knocking on your door, asking for some food, you must not turn them away empty-handed. Why did the beggar come to you? Father told us that it is because one of my ancestors was a beggar and one of this beggar's ancestors gave food to our begging ancestor when the position was other way around.

When buddhist monks come knocking at the door, Christians close their doors, but we offer them food. Giving something means that we are paying for the debts of our ancestors. That is the way we see it.

Father once told us something that is famous now. The debts of our ancestors' desires must materialize in this physical world. Therefore, there is a reason behind meeting good people and there is also a reason behind meeting bad people who do bad things to us. We must not avoid the people who are bad to us because these people come to us so we that can receive salvation through love. If we do not treat with the utmost sincerity of heart, the resolved debt will become our descendants' burden. This is karma; what comes around goes around.

Father concluded, "If there are debts to be repaid, we will not run into people(good or bad) and nothing(good or bad) will happen."

As I have said earlier, seven generations of ancestors receive salvation when a couple becomes a blessed family, but there must be a condition. If we are to receive salvation and save our ancestors, we must first bring into the open all of the sins that our ancestors had committed while they were on Earth. However, our ancestors are ashamed and embarrassed about that.

Think about it. After robbers or murderers commit sins, do they run or go to police station, saying ' Take me in.' Don't they run as far as possible? It is the same in the spirit world. They had committed sins but their sins are covered in the spirit world. Then, if we join The Unification Church, then the fact that my ancestors are perpetrators of crimes and the other person's ancestors are the victims are revealed.

Then, my ancestors who are perpetrators must give to the descendants whose ancestors are the victims. That is when the work of indemnifying for ancestors'sins happens. So when you come across an enemy, you should not hate the person who has done bad things to you, but rather think that you are making indemnifications for the sins of your ancestors.

Even in the same brothers, the ancestors at work are different. Also, if you resemble your father, then you are affected by the ancestors of your father, whereas if you resemble your mother, your are under the influence of your mother's ancestors.

When we look at how Father assigned ministers their fields, Father used to place the ministers who were working in the fields with little results to places where they yield lots of result. In opposite, Father used to send the ministers who were doing well in their works to difficult places where bringing results was very difficult. Father kept changing. Even the faithful members with high attendance to church would not come to the church if a minister with bad ancestors came to their church. On the other hand, when a minister with good ancestors would come, even the people who didn't come to the church so often would begin

93

attending.

Ministers are sometimes faced with difficulties even as they offer great *jeongseong*.

Even if that may be the case, ministers should not blame the members. If I am here to work as a minister, it may be that I've become the minister because of the problems of my ancestors. You may have to make indemnifications for the sins of your ancestors like that.

When your grandfather has a lot of debts but can't pay them off, the lenders don't come knocking at the door. However, if his son or grandson is in a ministerial position, then of course the lenders will come to you, saying 'You must make the payments for the debts your father and your grandfather failed to pay.' When we look at this world as a result, the same is applied for Unification Church members.

Unification Church ministers become both the messiahs and priests. In other words, Unification Church members become both priests and judges who will make the indemnifications for not only the sins of their own ancestors but the sins of their members and their ancestors as well.

However, since the ministers can only help the members make atonement for the sins of their ancestors only after they themselves make the necessary atonement for the sins of their own ancestors, Father can't help them before they make such atonement. The people in providential companies are in the Cain position and they receive payment for their work because the providence won't be able to advance if they complain. However, Father said he can't give monthly payments to pastors. Father then said that the ministers can receive their payment from a portion of their members tithing.

We will become the second and the third True Parents. Our Unification Church members live in much difficulties but Father said that nobody will be able to ignore us in the future.

However, we must endure the bone-shattering difficulties until our ancestors are finished being accused. We must endure it throughout our lives. We can't blame others for this. When we are faced with a difficult situation, we must realize that this is become of our ancestors. Then, only when we continuously offer *jeongseong*, we will receive God's pity, and also the pity of the victimized ancestors.

This is possible because we know the Principle of Restoration. The meeting between the human beings that are the fruit of the fall are actually all meant to be the meeting between enemies. Adam, Eve, and the archangel were supposed to build a relationship of love and kindness, but they became enemies because of the fall. God's providence however is to return this relationship back to that of loving the enemies.

Blessed families are also unions of enemies. Father blessed us with Japanese people who are our enemies. That is because the new history can only dawn when the enemies come together and resolve their hatred through the relationship of love called the blessing. If we follow Father's specific intention, we will love, understand, and develop together with our enemies instead of fighting them. That is why Father tells us always that we are enemies but we must love each other.

If the Japanese wives who come to Korea after marrying Korean husbands, in other words if they sacrifice themselves, the Korean husbands will be grateful for their Japanese wives. as a result, the victimized ancestors of Korean husbands come to forgive the ancestors of the Japanese wives. The cross blessing between Korean and Japanese people are works of resolving enmities.

We bring enemies into complete natural subjugation. If we keep being good to our enemies and move their hearts by serving them, we can bring them to natural subjugation. Then, the sins of my ancestors will be unresolved one by one from my actions. If my enemy's heart is moved and if he is brought to natural subjugation, his ancestors will no longer hold their grudges against my ancestors. This is the question we must ask ourselves in our every day lives.

94

When we think about this in terms of our ancestors, we begin to disregard about people we don't like, people we hate, and things that we like and hate. If we consider that the difficulty coming our way is the word of God to help resolve ancestors'sins, our path of faith becomes lot easier. I believe this will be of great help in living your everyday life.

95

Resurrection of evil spirits

Resurrection of evil spirits means the resurrection of the spirits in Hell. It was difficult for me to understand as well, even after reading Divine Principle many times over. I can however give you an explanation of it as I understood it from listening to Father's Words.

Father said that the people who succeed in this world have good ancestors. Scholars keep appearing in the families where they gave birth to many scholars, and doctors in the families that gave birth to many doctors. That is because the ancestors cooperate with their descendants.

Father told us that we absolutely need the cooperation from the spirit world if we are to achieve great success in this world. Father also walks the path of the Messiah from the time was eight years old with the help of the spirit world.

It is hard for us to become a masters of something only with our physical body and head. We need the spirit world's cooperation.

There are people around who fall into more difficulties without any particular reason. Such things happen to these people because their ancestors do not have a lot of good deeds under their belt. They did several bad things and many them are murderers, robbers, or other criminals.

Some of these bad ancestors even went to the spirit world without receiving punishment for their crimes. They go to the spirit world and realize ' Oh, I came to the spirit world without paying indemnifications for my sins. What shall I do?' They become anxious. However, such ancestors don't have a way to make the necessary payment since they no longer have their physical bodies. That is why they need the physical bodies of their descendants. That is also the reason their descendants unconsciously commit the same crimes that their ancestors had committed.

Then what happens? Such people (the descendants) will go to jail when their crimes are revealed. Father said, if a person receives 20 years for his crime, "He should not blame someone for it or try to avoid the sentencing but rather receive it gracefully." Why is that?

That person may think that he does not deserve such punishment. He may think how is it possible that he finish his 20-year long sentence. He is receiving the punishment for the sins of his ancestors as well. Father taught us to think that way. If our ancestors force us to commit sins, and if we repent after receiving the punishment, he will be forgiven and his ancestors will be forgiven together.

Bad ancestors don't know how to do good deeds. Since bad ancestors go to the spirit world after only doing bad things while on Earth, they make their descendants repeat their crimes, lead them to be punished, and have their sins forgiven together with the sins of their descendants. This is what's important in the resurrection of bad spirits.

The next thing I am going to tell you will be an example of how evil spirits can be purged on Earth.

When you work as a minister, you will meet a lot of unusual people. Father taught us to completely change the schedule of such unusual people.

For example, if a crazy person keeps appearing after midnight and goes to bed at noon the day after, then change his schedule. Father said that this is an evidence that he is being dragged around by evil spirits.

If the crazy person likes to climb mountains, let him climb mountains. If he likes watching movies, let him watch movies, too. Make him active during the day time. He becomes tired during the day time he won't have any energy to get up in the night, even if

96

the evil spirits try to wake him up. Failed to make him act as they wish, the evil spirits that once controlled him will leave.

As such, evil spirits in the spirit world are eager to use the people on Earth to do their bidding. That is because they are trying to relieve their sorrowful heart and make atonements for their sins.

97

Joy of life Centering on the Principle of Resurrection

How does Father, who knows the principle of resurrection, live? Father told us "I always think of two things when I meet someone."

One thing is, as we have mentioned earlier, since people are born of one sungsang out of God's twelve sungsangs, and Father treats whoever he meets with the sense that they are precious people, whether they be children or elderly folks,

It's hard for us to get close to Father. Father said that he treats anyone he meets with a humble heart and thinks 'God wants me to learn his certain sungsang!' Then his heart becomes so joyful. Father said that it is just like the first day of school, ready to learn

new things. Father enjoys meeting people because there are always new things to learn. He never gets bored or tired.

Father loves Mother in ways that change over time. Father sees mother in the morning and feels the beauty of spring, the beauty of passionate summer in the day, the beauty of refreshing breeze in the autumn in the afternoon, and coziness of winter in the night. Then when Father wakes up the next morning, he sees Mother and feels different kinds of love from different perspective. So he never gets tired of his love for Mother.

Father once told us: we should not think our spouse is ugly, but look at it as their uniqueness. In Japan, people say that when people are in love, even the ugly features look pretty. If your spouse's nose isn't placed straight or small, look at it carefully. Then you will later think that your wife has a unique face, and she will look pretty if you keep thinking that she is pretty. We must eternally own and become joyful of the uniqueness of our spouse. Father lives such a life and he never becomes bored of life.

The second thing Father thinks about whenever he meets someone is 'How will I make this person happy?' He said that he realizes that method if he keeps thinking about it. 'Omnipotent and omniscient God' means 'the love of God.' since God is our parent, he said that he is bestowed with the knowledge and ability to make people happy. Therefore, God's omnipotence and omniscience means His love.

So when we deal with people, the sheer fact of thinking 'How will I make this person happy?' bring a great joy. When we experience the happiness of others, then their happiness can become our happiness and their joy can become our joy. Father told us that there is nobody more pathetic than those who think 'How will I use this person?' Father said that we should therefore only think about how we will make other people happy. All that effort will ultimately return to us.

Father used to ask us on occasion "What do you want to eat?" One time I answered "I want to eat cold noodles." A long time has passed since back then, but Father still looks at me and sometimes says "Gil Ja! I'll buy you cold noodles. You like it, right?" Father amazingly still remembers that. Father once asked me "What color do you like the most?" so I asked him back, "Father, what color do you like the best?" Then Father answered "jade!" Jade is the color of jade stones (pale blue) made in Korea.

Father offers sincere *jeongseong* in order to make what other people like happen. That it self becomes Father's joy.

When we make other people happy, not only do those people become happy but we can become happy ourselves. Rather, we gain even greater happiness. How about that? When we live in such way, would there be people to hate, people you don't like, or

people you think are bad? That's Father's perspective on life. Father lives like that and that is why his days are always filled with joy. He is excited to see everyone he sees. Let us live like that as well.

98

Chapter 6 Predestination Christology

Father strictly applies the principle of predestination

God's predestination in terms of His Will is absolute according to the Principle of Predestination, and the core of the teaching is that when people fail to fulfill their responsibility, someone else will take their place.

Father taught us that this also explains to Father himself as well and that he feels this very strongly about this. Father said that this is the reason that he has never been able to loosen the rope in his heart after he'd found out about the principle of predestination.

Father first thought that he must not let anyone steal this precious principle. As the archangel was able to stay one step ahead of God, because he knew the things that God was going to do in the Garden of Eden, Father thought that it would be imperative not to let anyone steal the Words of principle, lest they use the Words for bad purposes. However, the reason Father can reveal the Principle to the whole world now is that the time has come.

Father has a very close friend named No Pil Kwak with whom he used to attend high school. After he traveled to the South, Father visited No Pil Kwak's house in Busan. That night, in a room filled with people sleeping, Father told No Pil, "Hey, No Pil. I may look like a bum right now but people all over the world will listen to the Principle I proclaim and follow me."

No Pil Kwak heard this and thought "Aha. He was such a smart young man, but the difficult times he spent have made him nuts." When I told about this to Father later, Father said "Hey, the reason I told them that was because that's how much I trusted him."

That's how much Father kept the Principle a secret until the right time came.

Father knew that, even though he was sent as the Messiah, his Messianic mission could be given to someone else if he was not able to fulfill his responsibility. Father said that that is why he kept making the determination to fulfill his responsibility. He thought, ' I

must offer the greatest amount of *jeongseong* if I am to fulfill my responsibility as the Messiah better than anyone in the past, present, or future.'

We must remember it in the deepest depth of our hearts that Father tried so hard to endure. It is easy for us to call Father's name, but Father is very serious about the significance of hearing his name. Father always asks himself, 'Am I fulfilling the role of father well? Am I really loving others more than myself? Am I really sacrificing myself for others?'"

Shouldn't Father be served by not only the people on Earth but also by the countless spirits in the spirit world? Also, since there is only one True Parents of humankind, wouldn't our descendants want to know about how their True Parents lived on Earth? They will investigate how much *jeongseong* Father offered and how much he sacrificed for humanity.

What Father worries about is that when he goes to the spirit world, if there is someone who comes up to him and says "Father has went through much difficulties as the Messiah. However, I've sacrificed even more for the Will of God than Father." Father would not be able to hold his head up high in front of God.

Father said that it is very important how Rev. Moon lived as the Messiah. Father said he must create the standard that he endured more hardship than anyone in the history of humanity.

Because Father has to remain as the magnificent Father for whom the newborn descendants can shed tears, this was when Father was born and this was how long he wore

99

his physical body, and he endured many hardships." Father is always anxious and he never has any time to rest. Father once told us, "You don't know the spirit world so you can get rest or stop if you want to, but I can't do that because I know the spirit world."

The time on Earth is like a blink of an eye when compared to the time in the spirit world. Father told us, "When we think that our position is determined by our short time on Earth, how could we live comfortably?" and also we were told that "I will not comfortably die on a bed but will choose the death of martyrdom, speaking until my body no longer functions. That is the highest honor for me."

When we go to the spirit world and Father asks us "What have you done on Earth? Did you do this and that?" then we must not answer him "Father didn't talk about doing those things." That is why it is Father's responsibility is to talk until he draws his last breath. That is why we see Father always talking to the best of his capacity everyday. What should happen now that we know this? Shouldn't we, his children, at least try to follow his footsteps?

Even now, Father gives us directions that are nearly impossible to complete and goes out to the ocean to pray for us. However, the oceans are a very dangerous place to be. A storm can suddenly flip the boat over. Father puts his life at the mercy of the ocean in a small boat and spends a thousand, perhaps ten-thousand times more serious *jeongseong* while he offers tearful prayers in order to make the condition of indemnification.

The principle of predestination also applies to Father. The same rule applies to us as well.

100

The relationship between God, Jesus, and True Parents

There are two things we must know in Christology.

First is the question 'Is Jesus God Himself?' The answer is no, Jesus is not God Himself.

Christians believe that Jesus is God Himself. It can't be avoided. Jesus is recorded in the bible as someone who prayed a lot to God. If Jesus is God, how could he have prayed to himself?

I debated on this subject in America with other Christian pastors for nine years. We must explain to Christians that Jesus is the son of God and not God himself.

Christians are angry because we believe Father to be the second advent, and they think that we believe Father as God Himself too. In other words, Christians have misunderstood that we believe in a different God than the God in which they believe. Back a few years ago, I explained this a lot to Christians pastors in America.

Jesus is not God Himself but a perfect human being who has the equal value as God. We learned about the value of perfected men in Christology. That is why we explain that, though Jesus perfected himself and became a person who Satan cannot accuse, he is not God Himself.

When I meet those pastors in America these days, I tell them that there is no need to fight even though our doctrines are different. When I saw them putting their heads down, saying, "As Rev. Moon has fulfilled all the things that we wanted to do through our prayers, we must go through the process of learning his teachings now." I felt that Christians truly will be convinced in the future. I also thought that "Fighting because of doctrinal differences is only a process. Christians will surely kneel before the amazing works that Father left behind."

We must teach about this to the Christians who still believe Jesus to be God Himself. I was attending a Presbyterian Church when I was in middle school. The level of reverence for Jesus was so great that the pastor even said that there was no God above in heaven once Jesus was born on this Earth. In other words, as Jesus is not a human being like us but God Himself, he neither man nor woman. Therefore, Jesus would not have felt anything even if he had seen a woman.

During the 160,000 couple Korean Japanese sisterhood pact ceremony, Father said something very blatant as he was teaching the Japanese women.

"Is Jesus man or woman?"

"He is a man."

"Do you think he had a male organ?"

"He did."

"Then he must use which he has, right?"

"Yes!"

The Japanese women had no choice but to answer. Jesus was clearly a man and had

the male organ, Father therefore explained clearly that Jesus was supposed to marry a woman. Even when we look at this, we get to realize how great the difference between Christian pastors and Father is. Christians are oblivious to this and keep throwing stones at us, saying "Why do you say Jesus is a human being and that he is a man?"

The second aspect we must know is that God wants humans to elevate to a position even higher than him because God is the parent of humankind and the humanity are His children. It is just as in our own family, where if the parents couldn't go to school and be educated for a reason, the parents will want their children to succeed. If the children are able

101

to succeed, their parents will be revered too. There are probably many among you whose parents went through so much sacrifice to put you through college.

Parents want their children to become successful, and parents want this with all their heart even though they themselves couldn't receive such blessing. In addition, doesn't a subject partner also want its object partner to become better than itself? Just as such, we come to believe that the heart of True Love is to want others to become better than us.

I once got into a fiery debate with a Catholic priest. We debated over the subject of God. I told the priest that God is in the subject partner position and we humans in the object partner position, and that God is the parent and humankind are the children. Then I told him "God, who is our parent, wants his children to ascend to a position that is even higher than him." Then the priest bellowed "No!" I asked him "Why not?" He was perplexed at the idea of humans ascending even higher than God.

So I asked him, "Father, are you married?" He said he is not married. So I told him "You don't know because you don't have a wife or children. When people get married, they bear children. When children are born, their parents want their children to become much better than they are. Just as such, when we say God is our parent and we human beings His children, God wants human beings to attain an even higher position than Him." This is the Principle that Father taught us.

There was nobody in the history of mankind who said ' Human beings are God's children, and God wants human beings to attain even higher position than Him.'

Father made definitions of God in many different new ways. Father once defined God as a poor God. On the other hand, Christian churches call Him, glorious God, holy God, and omnipotent and omniscient God.

Then, how did Father come to realize that God is poor? Father was walking on the street when he met a truly poor homeless grandfather, and Father felt that God was just as poor as that grandfather. After feeling such a state of God, Father wondered who else can relieve the sorrowful heart of such a God. From this, he decided to walk the path of God's Will.

Father also said "I have come to find the physical body of Jesus which Satan took and fulfill the mission that Jesus left unfulfilled."

Father asked us "Is the body of Jesus holier or is the body of Adam before he fell at 16 years old, more important?"

Adam's body before he was 16 years old was very holy because it was before he fell. However, Jesus' body was like a stained rag since he came as the fruit of a 4,000 year long history of restoration through indemnification.

Mother is Father's great masterpiece

When we look at page 112 of 3-hour Divine Principle Summarized Hoon Dok Charts, we see a picture of True Mother on the right.

Mother was 17 years old when she wedded Father. She was very young, wasn't she? I served Mother, too, when I was serving Ye Jin Nim and Hyo Jin Nim. Mother was so spiritually bright that she was able to reduce a topic that I couldn't summarize in ten words into just one word. When she did, I couldn't find anything wrong with her conclusion.

Mother is such a great person. Moreover, Mother is educated by our great Father and she has something that we cannot even imagine. Her greatness can be attributed to the efforts of Dae Mo Nim. Mother stands upon Dae Mo Nim's foundation of faith.

Mother told me recently, "Hey, you know, Father, he keeps calling me, ' My half, my half.'" That's really true. Father can try everything possible to become perfect but he is only a half person without Mother, right? Mother now stands on the equal position as Father. Many times after the Holy Marriage, I witnessed Father educating Mother about the providence of God very seriously.

Father said that, in hindsight, educating Mother was most the difficult thing. His ordeals of receiving tortures were easy compared to the pain he had to endure while teaching Mother. Father said that he would have said "Sorry, I can't." when God told him "You take the responsibility of fulfilling the mission of Messiah!" had he known that the Messiah, or the Perfected Adam, had to find a woman and raise her to become the perfected Eve, and that the task was so difficult.

However, Father took the responsibility without knowing about it and God thoroughly educated Father in self-denial. Father said "That alone was difficult enough but I had to perfect Mother on top of that. It was very hard. How could I express it all with words?"

Father was God's masterpiece and Mother in turn was Father's masterpiece. So if Father is the sun, Mother is the moon. We can't look straight into the sun. However, we can look straight into the moon. When it's a full moon, looking at the moon brings us joy and a sense of refreshment.

That is why, if we are to go to God, we must go to Father through Mother, and then to God through Father. We can't go straight to Father. That is how precious and close to us our Mother is.

In 1992, Father appointed Mother as the chairwoman of Women's Federation for World Peace, and made her proclaim Father's Words in a world-tour encompassing Korea, America, and Japan.

Father told us at the time, "As we see in the Bible, God created Adam and then realized that him living alone is not good. Then God took one of Adam's ribs and made Eve, a woman well-suited for him. This story doesn't mean to simply say that men have one less rib than women, but the rib bone, which is located close to the heart, symbolizes the partner of love."

Father said that this means God created Adam, and Eve was created by Adam. Therefore, Mother who is the third Eve, is not directly guided by God but Father must guide Mother in God's position.

Also, as Eve seduced and led Adam to his fall in the Garden of Eden, the process of restoration must go through the opposite direction; Mother, who is the perfected Eve, must serve Father and help him become successful. Only then could she indemnify the first Eve's

103

sin of ruining the first Adam.

When hearing that Mother's Words were easier to understand than Father's, Father said jokingly, "Mother is receiving glories like the Queen Elizabeth and I am like Philip, watching the queen from behind the scene. I am declining."

Then Mother told him "Oh, don't go down, please stay where you are. I will go up to the top and pull Father." True Parents exchanged jokes like that, but it meant that Mother was in the position to serve Father and help him become successful.

We must understand that Mother is in a high position that no one can match from the providential point of view. Even Father cannot complete the providence without Mother.

After Mother finished her proclamation world-tour, Father spoke with joy, "Mother heralded the highest heavenly fortune and she ascended to the highest of position." It was possible because Mother helped Father to obtain that position of Father.

I visited Pyongyang twice and I could see that everyone in North Korea would wear a badge with the portrait of Kim Il Sung near their heart(chest). I got a hold of one of them and asked what is that(the Kim Il Sung badge). Then that person answered

"He(Kim Il Sung) has passed away but I will always feel that He is alive in spirit and lives with me as long as my heart beats." After hearing that, I was inspired to think ' We will have to lecture the Principle to North Korean people in order to unify this nation. We will only be able to beat them if we bring a badge that is even stronger than the Kim Il Sung badge."

So I created Mother badge and showed it to the Parents and explained its meaning. Parents became happy and gave permission to produce and wear the badge. Mother said "Let men also wear the Mother badge."

Later I received permission to make Father badge and three-generation badge. Unification House produces this badge and distributes it in Korea, Japan, and America, and we have also distributed it in the Cheongpyeong 40-day wives workshop for the Blessed Family wives around the world.

We call this badge True Parents' ' badge to inherit heavenly fortune.' Many members actually testify that they have experienced great spiritual miracles while wearing this badge.

One Blessed Family mother who wears a Mother badge went to bed with the badge placed on the top of her head and was sleeping next to her daughter when she had a dream. Blinding light started to emanate from the Mother badge. The door opened itself and the light reached the space outside of the room. The Satans that had been lurking on the other side of the door screamed as they ran away.

I am certain that the grace will be with you if you wear this heavenly fortune inheritance badge. Father told us to wear this badge when we come to Cheon Jeong Gung for Hoon Dok Hae. When the general election for North and South Korea happens, we have made the determination to wear this badge, go to North Korea, and lecture about the Divine Principle.

When Father was touring all over America to give his speech, Father also made a big Father badge and wore it at his chest. I personally heard stories that many guests who came to Father's speech rallies came even though they had never seen Father before, because they received great spiritual inspirations and grace after seeing Father's badges worn by the members.

104

Chapter 7

Introduction to Restoration

Father walks a strict path of indemnity

In his search for the Principle, Father realized that every Principle applies to him first and foremost.

One day, we members went to the Bagun peak in Bukhan mountain with Father. While there, Father drew a circle around him with the cane he brought. Then he said "Even Teacher can't set one foot outside of this boundary called indemnity."

I was young back then and I didn't know what Father was talking about. However, after many years have passed, I began to understand that 'Father walks in front of us in the unforgiving course of indemnity.'

I want to introduce to you an excerpt of Father's Words regarding this.
"The indemnity needed to become the Messiah is not an easy conditional indemnity.

It is an one-on-one unforgiving, thorough indemnity. The Messiah has to pay even more indemnity more than his fair share.

Then what did I center on when I embarked on the journey during the course of indemnity? I started centering on God's *shimjeong*. God's *shimjeong* is both mystifying and scary. As the indemnity is paid centering on God's *shimjeong*, the stepping stone in the beginning could be small and it's still bearable.

No matter how grand and international something could be, it needs to start from a point and work its way up to becoming international. When we look at something centering on *shimjeong*, a condition for indemnity could be made possible because that one point can be infinitely large. Otherwise, the eternal world will never change following the changes in our internal movements.

In other words, the external world of hyungsang will slowly start to crumble when the internal movement of sungsang stands on a firm standard. Then, the signs of hyungsang begin to appear on this Earth. Also, the sovereignty of the old world begins to crumble as well. That is why Communism is in decline." (Fathers Words in Japan in 1967)

This one-on-one indemnity is also explained in the Old Testament. In the Old Testament, people were to give life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth. (Exodus 21:23~25)

Our ancestors had to walk a difficult course of painful indemnity for five thousands years in order to receive the Lord sent to this nation by God. Also, the clansmen of Moon had to walk an unimaginable torment of a indemnity course in order to allow the birth of our Father in a Moon family.

Father recently said "Since I've sacrificed one daughter and three sons, I have made enough sacrifices to be made." Father's second daughter, Hye Jin Nim, passed away only eight days after her birth. Father said that Hye Jin Nim was offered as a sacrifice that represents the entire realm of Eve. Mother shed many years back then. However, Father never shed a single tear and he never expressed his sorrow outwardly.

Then, Hee Jin Nim passed away when he died in an accident, falling from a train while on his way to a witnessing mission. Father, even then, never shed a tear and only talked about other subjects than the members. Father never expressed his sorrow.

Next, Heung Jin Nim died in a car accident in America. I was serving Father at that time. Father never cried. Rather, he spent his days with an expression of a faint smile. Mother was tremendously sad. Father told her "Heung Jin Nim is being offered to heaven in place of his father. If you are sad, he can't be offered as a sacrifice. Please don't be sad." Then Father

105

comforted her heart by saying "Mother is going through so much difficulties because she married me, a man with a difficult life."

Fourth, Young Jin Nim died in a tragic accident in America. His body was brought to Korea for the funeral and I was beside True Parents when they lowered the casket into the ground. Mother did not show any expression of sorrow. Young Jin Nim was Young Jin Nim's next younger brother and the two of them were so close. They played around as if they were twins, and Hyung Jin Nim looked sad but he also did not cry. I was serving True Parents while thinking, 'Oh, Young Jin Nim is truly gone!' and before leaving the grave after putting all the dirt, Father smiled and said "Young Jin! Good bye!"

I was so surprised. Seeing Father never lose his smile like that, I thought to ask him when I had the chance. The next day, I served Father his breakfast and asked him "I saw that you smiled at the end when you were sending off Young Jin Nim." Then Father said "Yes. I sent Young Jin with the heart of sending a daughter off to her marriage."

Folks, how do you think the heart of parents who send their daughter off to her marriage is like? We will feel sad about sending away our daughter to another house but in the end, would we not say 'You go there and live a good life!' ? So we keep our smile on and send our child away with hope. Father's expression was exactly that. I thought 'Father really is different from regular people. The Messiah must walk the unforgiving and thorough course of indemnity like this.'

Father said "I've offered to heaven my four children as the sacrifices that represent the first Adam(Hee Jin Nim), the second Adam(Heung Jin Nim), the third Adam(Young Jin Nim), and Eve(Hye Jin Nim). I've made all the needed sacrifices." I felt even more that 'Oh, The indemnity for Messiah is so harsh.'

106

The relationship between fallen human beings and the Messiah

'Indemnification' means 'paying back one's debt.' 'Sin' holds the same meaning as debt so 'indemnifying'sins means that you are cleansing yourself of your sins.

'Restoration' means that the humanity that have fallen to the Satanic world due to the Fall are 'returning to its original position after cleansing themselves of their sins.' These two concepts join to form the Restoration through Indemnification.

We can't avoid this course since the Messiah has also walked this course. The only difference between us and the Messiah is that we are able to walk this course with less hardships thanks to the great indemnification made by the Messiah during his entire life course.

According to Father, the relationship between the fallen humanity and the Messiah is similar to a fly who rests on the shoulder of a Korean who travels from his country to America by a plane. Doesn't the fly only have to remain seated on the man's shoulder to arrive at America? Father said that that is the relationship between the messiah and the fallen humanity, and that is also the difference between the messiah and the fallen humanity.

Father also compared the relationship between the Messiah and the fallen humanity to a mother carrying her baby across a mountain infested with tigers. Mother is the Messiah and the baby is us the fallen humanity. The mother will be able to safely traverse through the mountain only if the baby would sleep quietly. If the baby cries, tigers will come and devour both the mother and the baby. Therefore, we must not make any noise as we follow the Messiah.

That is the noise of complaint. Therefore, no matter how much result we may gain under our belt, we must not complain. Our complaints enable Satan to accuse us. Father explained about the relationship between the Messiah and the fallen humanity using these two examples.

107

Do not criticize providential central figures when lecturing the Principle

The Principle of Restoration is not a story that belongs to other people. Everything that happened in the course of Adam's family, Noah's family, Abraham's family, Jacob's family, and Moses' family is also being repeated in our everyday lives and our lives as whole. God picked his central figure to do special missions whenever his principle of restoration was moved to the following stage. As these are a type of model course spearheaded by our ancestors, we are following their courses without even knowing about it.

I often tell lecturers that they should not give lectures with the heart of criticizing the central figures. What I tell them if they really can't help but to feel pitiful for the failures of their ancestors in the course of restoration, is to think in the position of Adam, think if you were able to overcome the obstacle wisely if you were put in the same position. We must give lectures with the heart 'Yes! I will fulfill the works that Adam or Noah was not able to do!' We must not give lectures to students with a judgmental heart, criticizing the mistakes made by our ancestors.

As there is an adage, 'Ghosts come to those who speak their name,' Noah comes to the lecturers who give lectures about him. Noah will come, listen to the lecture, and think 'OK, we did our best while we knew nothing about the Principle and when Parents weren't alive with us. Unlike us, you know the Principle and you serve True Parents while they are alive, so you must do better than us. We'll be watching you.'

Father said that in the spirit world, there is Adam's spirit world, Noah's spirit world, and Abraham's spirit world existing separately from each other. When we die and go to the spirit world, we must pass through the spirit world of The Old Testament, then Jesus's spirit world of The New Testament, and then to True Parents's spirit world of The Completed Testament. Here, they will listen to our stories and won't let us go if they can find a condition to accuse us. If they don't let us through, we can't go to Father's spirit world.

We must sympathize with their mistakes and try to comfort their heart by telling them that we will carry on the works that they left behind. Then they will be happy and cooperate with us.

Father told us, that when we see news of all sorts of different crimes being committed, we must not think that such crimes belong to the perpetrators alone but we are also connected to them through our common ancestors, and sympathize with such people instead of having the heart of criticizing them.

Principle of restoration is a Principle of living

We will now talk about the condition for indemnification needed for ridding ourselves of fallen natures that originated from the Fall.

Who were the main characters in the Fall? It was Adam, Eve, the archangel, Cain, and Abel. They were the main characters. In other words, we had the fallen Adam, Eve, and Satan, and then Cain and Abel who had to be restored.

The condition for indemnity that we must make in order to create a vertical foundation of faith centering on God is a vertical indemnity condition. The foundation of substance is the foundation that has to be made through the relationship between the children of Eve: Cain and Abel. To put it simply, the foundation of faith is the relationship between me and God, and the foundation of substance is the relationship between me and you; the relationship between Cain and Abel. It's difficult to understand after reading just the Introduction to Restoration but the concept begins to seep into our brain when we enter the section on Adam's family.

It is good to give a lecture on the Introduction to Restoration and then continue with Adam's family. It's difficult to get the feeling of what restoration is just by reading the Introduction, but we are able to know clearly what the foundation of faith, the foundation of substance, and the indemnity condition are that have to be made in order to rid ourselves of fallen nature. When we listen to a lecture on Adam's family, we can have an idea about separating good and evil.

There are small discrepancies when we look at history, but Noah's family came when Adam's family failed, and Abraham's family came when Noah's family failed. Central families for the providence of restoration keep appearing as such, and we come to have a complete understanding of the foundation of faith, foundation of substance, and indemnity condition are by learning this process.

There is one thing I remember from what Father said in the morning of the day he went to Danbury. Even in such serious moment, Father was worrying about us, and he said "You guys, serve Mother in my place and walk on the course of the Will of God. For that, each of you must unite with your leader. However, that's difficult because you have fallen natures. In such instances, pray to God repeatedly and tell Him what specific fallen nature you want gone from you."

I felt that jealousy was the strongest fallen nature I had. Trying to rid myself of jealousy first, I prayed to God for many months. In those prayers I kept yelling "Jealousy Satan, get out! Jealousy Satan, get out!" Then one day in a dream, my chest burst open like a crate and Satan came jumping out from inside. With a painful groan

mixed with hints of resentment, Satan jumped out of my body, saying "I can't live inside you anymore because now you know my presence. I'm leaving your body!" I could not see the front side of Satan as he flew upward through the ceiling until he disappeared from my sight. In that moment, I was reminded of Father's Words, "Satan does not reveal his identity."

I felt so light in the chest after Satan left my body. I was able to remain serene even at instances when I would have become jealous in the past.

Another situation happened when I was in America. The common understanding among the people at the time was that they must follow a vegetarian diet and stay away from meat consumption in order to gain good health. One night, a spirit that cooperates with me appeared in my dream and yelled at me, as if he had enough of what I was doing, "People have to eat meat from time to time!" Unlike the Satan that escaped my body, that cooperative spirit revealed his front side and he was so tall that his head was touching the ceiling.

After that dream, I realized that the spirit world has no spatial limit. I came to understand that spirits can resize their body to the size of the building in which they appear.

109

Father, determined to die as a martyr as he gives his Words

We must read Father's Speech Book often. Do you know what benefit you can gain in your life of faith if you work in a ministerial position? You can't avoid learning about Father's Words because you must give a sermon every Sunday and lecture about the Principle to new-comers. When we realize it, this is actually a great benefit.

Your doctoral degree will not do you much good when you go to the spirit world. However, if you are a pastor, you have to keep looking for Father's Words because you must do your utmost to satisfy the members. Then how grateful should we be to Father who has given us his Words? Father has given us more than 400 volumes of books worth of Words and now we must delve ourselves into it.

Diligently reading Father's Words means that I and others are living in the same time and space as he. What is the most precious thing one could gain from his pastoral position? It is the fact that he must read Father's Words a lot and speak about Father's Words a lot. Think about Father. What is Father's purpose of coming on this Earth? Father came to give the Words that were lost to humanity due to the fall. Was there

anyone in the history of mankind who spoke of God's heart so precisely and so eloquently? There was not.

Since the human ancestors have lost the Words, Father had to find the Words through each stage from the position of a sacrificial offering. Father gives his these Words to use; his Words of the world of *shimjeong*, from the highest position. Also, Father's Words are Words of re-creation.

As Father was born on this Earth with the body of a human and became completely one in heart with God, now no one can defeat Father's Words and his ideal. Father told us that therefore sometime in the future, people will realize that the books in libraries are worthless and we should burn them all. After coming in contact with Father's Words, I never read other books for many decades. I felt that other books were just not worth my time.

Some elder pastors try to improve their sermon skills by reading collections of books written by Christian pastors. They should not do that. Father hates this very much. Also, we should not publish our own sermon book. Father once became very angry at the news that someone published such book. "What have you spoke that is worthy of such a collection?", he said. Father was angry because some pastors merely spoke a few words from Father's Words and added their own words.

Father said it is OK however for family members to publish their collection of testimonies. Father wants us to continue reading his Words, talk to other members about his Words, and live inside the Words.

Father once said that he wants that he die as a martyr after his legs fail while giving his Words to us. Father said that he can't die as a normal person, lying comfortably in a bed.

I once cried a lot in my heart. It was the time of the blessing of 6,500 couples in the Ilhwa McCol Factory in Yongin. As I've said earlier, people who join the church after already marrying their spouse outside the church offer more devotions. About 250 such couples were coming to receive the blessing. Some wives had to persuade their husbands and some had to force their spouses to come.

I got word that these people would be arriving around 7 in the evening. After hearing this, Father said he would not eat until these people arrive. Father kept speaking to the Korean couples who were getting blessed. However, it became 7 in the evening and they did not come.

Mother became worried and she told me to tell Father to eat dinner. I was reluctant, thinking I would be scolded by Father when I tell him that. Then Mother told Eun Jin Nim, "Eun Jin. Go tell your Father." Then Eun Jin Nim carefully told Father, "Father, you should eat now." Father became angry suddenly and said "Is eating that important? Is sleeping that

110

important?" In the end, we were only scolded and failed to serve Father his dinner. Father kept speaking until 5 in the morning of the next day when they finally arrived,

staying up all night. Father kept speaking without even sleeping. When the married Japanese couples to be blessed finally came, Father made them come to the room where he was giving the speech, made two families come onto the stage, gave a benediction, and then told the church president to lead the blessing ceremony instead.

I was in charge of giving pressure massages to Father at the time. I felt the need to get some sleep and I must have been sleeping in a corner of the lecture hall. Then Mother called for me suddenly, "Gil Ja! Come quickly!" I went to her in hurry.

When I went to the room where Parents were, Father's legs were so stiff that he could not even sit down with his legs bent. Father could not sit down naturally as a normal person could but fell down on the floor sideways with a heavy thump. He was like a old tree falling to the ground.

There was a man named Mr. Yoon who was also there to give pressure massages to Father. He massaged Father's upper body and I massaged Father's legs. Father's legs were so stiff and hard that it was very difficult to massage them. I wanted to cry my heart out but I had to hold back.

Father's legs were as stiff as a log that it was almost impossible to massage them with my fingers. I knew it would be more painful but I had to massage them with my elbows. It was still difficult. I felt as if Father was going to die. Mother was also in a state of panic, not knowing what to do. Father's entire body was solidified.

I felt a great sense of emergency. This had already happened before in America. On that day, Father spoke for 12 hours while standing. Father's legs were almost paralyzed due to the arduous schedule of the tour but Father did not care.

Father slept on the bed together with Mother that night. While sleeping, Father woke up to go to bathroom. Father's study room was right outside his bedroom and he had to go through the study room to get to the bathroom. Father barely managed to go to the

study room and he fell to the floor when his legs became too stiff. He completely lost his senses in his legs. Father said that he thought ' O, I' m going to go to the spirit world like this.' After some time had passed, Father emerged from unconsciousness and made a resolution to survive, thinking ' No, not yet. Not now.' Father must have completely lost control of his limbs when he fell on the floor like that.

At this time, Father told his legs, "My legs! Please get up one more time. If you can get up and support my body, would you not come to heaven with me?" It was not only his legs that froze but it was his entire body. Father had to summon all of his strength and will power to massage his own body to finally get the blood flowing. The situation was truly dire. I heard this story directly from Father.

Hearing such story from Father before, I could not contain my shock and anxiety seeing Father in such state. My personal shock and panic were one thing, but what do you think Mother had felt? Try and imagine. I cannot describe how scared I was. I wondered if Father's heart had stopped but I felt so bad about putting my ear against his heart to check.

Massaging Father's stiff body with Mr. Yoon, I wanted to cry my heart out but I couldn't. I couldn't cry in front of Father and Mother so I had to hold back my tears with all my strength. I remembered Father saying that he would die while speaking and I wondered if maybe this was the time when that will truly happen.

As exemplified by this story, Father's body is a wreck. It's easy for us to assume that Father is in good health because he is the Messiah and he is born with a special body. Unfortunately, that is not the case. We must understand that Father truly gives his Words to us even today with all his strength and might, even facing death.

Father once said that if he relaxes and begins to sleep, he will sleep for more than ten years.

111

Father could not even pray for Mother

There were many times my heart ached because of Mother's brittle body. Mother began giving birth at a very young age. Mother also went through many Caesarian sections. Because of that, Mother's body has become very weak over the years. Mother even refuses the cool breeze from air conditioners during the summers. She avoids cold air because every joint in her body aches whenever she is hit by it.

Following his mission, Father worked very hard for the McCol factory which was in Yongin at the time. Mother wasn't even able to sleep soundly or eat properly in order to follow Father's busy schedule. Mother had developed a stomach ulcer as a result of it and she suffered so much when she was in Alaska. It was obvious why her body became so weak.

In Alaska, Father used to leave the house around 5 in the morning, so breakfasts were served at around half past 4. Then everyday, Mother said "I can't eat!" and refused breakfast. She skipped breakfast and, at lunch on the boat out in the ocean, she was able to have good lunch. However, she couldn't eat dinner. They would leave the ocean around 10 pm. and return home around 11 pm. Dinner would be served then.

Mother was only able to eat lunch properly out of the three meals. Mother drank a cup of juice and a piece of rice cake as breakfast in order to follow Father's schedule, but she wasn't able to have a proper meal when she became hungry.

In the end, she developed a chronic stomach ulcer and her stomach would hurt very much when she became even a little hungry. She risks her life like this in an effort to follow Father's schedule. When I see her remaining so beautiful, even after enduring so much hardships such as giving birth to True Children, I truly feel that the heaven is protecting her.

Father of course is aware of Mother's severe pain. Father once said this in the McCol factory in Yongin, Gyeonggi province.

"I saved many lives with prayers. However, I can't pray for Mother. I can't pray for Mother if there is even one woman in this world shedding tears for whatever reason. As righteous women who are in the position of Mother's daughters are still captivated in the darker corners of the Earth, Mother must share their suffering at least in one form. That is why Mother's body must suffer. That is why I can't pray for Mother even though I can completely relieve her of bodily pains with a simple prayer."

I felt so sorry and I didn't know what to do when I realized that the most ideal form of couple's love, the love of True Parents, must rigidly follow the righteous path. I reminded myself of this whenever I had the chance in my long life, and I lost count of how many times I shed tears thinking about our poor Mother.

It is a sin to know such things and still fail to abide by them. It's OK if we live normal lives without knowing these but I felt that serving True Parents from such a close distance can be very difficult in living a filial life. I carry a strong sense of guilt.

When I think about True Parents who are spearheading the providence with their lives on the line, I come to feel maybe we can think about such True Parents and endure our own hardships no matter how difficult things could become at some times. True Parents do this while heavily taxing their mind and body, thinking it would be adequate even if they had to die as martyrs so that they could lead us to salvation.

112

Chapter 8

Adam's Family Noah's Family Father loves Cain first

What I am about to tell you is what I've heard often from Father. This is not in the Divine Principle.

The fact that Cain killed Abel is important in Adam's family. Adam's family failed because of this.

Father always thinks deeply about the way Cain could have refrained from killing Abel, and united with him to fulfill God's Will, and Father practices the way himself. Father's close family members or direct children are Abel and we, who are not his direct children, are Cain. However, Father does not have time to be with his own children but he always spends a lot of time with members or leaders who are Cain.

When I was in East Garden, I could see that Father ate all three meals a day with us and had meetings with us all day long. His children were left behind. Father ate nicely prepared meals with side dishes with us in the dining room but the children had to go past a small kitchen and quickly eat whatever there was and go to school. I always felt so sorry for them.

One day, Hyo Jin Nim was walking by the place where Father and we were having a meeting. When Father saw him, he said "Hyo Jin, I'm so sorry. There was something I really wanted to tell you but I couldn't. I'm so sorry." I thought in my heart, "Does he really not have enough time to tell him a sentence when they live together under one roof?"

I soon realized that he really does not have even a little time to do that. Father wakes up before any of his children wake up and goes to bed after all of his children go to bed. There were many days when Father could not even see his children's faces. Before he goes to bed, he sometimes opens the door to his children's room. However, it's too dark and he can't caress his children, so he just says "Good night." and gives a short prayer. Father spends many of his days like that.

We see that Father loves Cain first in his life. The heart of Cain who receives Father's love will be moved, and Cain, whose heart has been moved, will come to serve Abel. People in the past were not able to do this. Father always talks about the need of this.

"My parents and siblings could have followed me only if I had told the Principle to them, but I couldn't utter a word to them about it."

Why couldn't he say anything about it? Father said that his mouth would freeze whenever he tried to talk about the Principle. God stopped him from speaking. Father said "the Cain world must be restored first before we can restore the Abel world. This is the order of restoration. I tell you to restore your tribes because we have such a law of Cain and Abel. I am telling you to relieve the sorrowful heart of the Teacher who wasn't able to restore his own tribe."

What we must learn from Adam's family is how we are going to be kind to the Cain side people and treat them in a way that doesn't make them complain.

If Abel sympathized with his brother Cain when he saw that God refused to take Cain's offering, Cain would not have killed Abel. If God's providence is to be completed, the Abel side of a person must harbor the nature that can bring the Cain side people into natural subjugation.

That is what we must learn, however Father said "This is the other way around in

113

Japan." Since the old times, Japan had the spirit of Bushido and superiors order their subordinates to commit suicide when they are disobedient. So the pastors act similarly and treat their members in a very authoritarian manner, saying "I am your Abel. Obey me!"

When I went to Japan, I could see that this was really hurting the hearts of Japanese members. Many Japanese members were struggling because of the Cain Abel relationship. Father talks a lot about this relationship in hopes of allowing the Japanese members to properly realize this and learn that Abel people must be able to bring Cain people into natural subjugation.

114

People around Adam's family

This is something I found out by asking Father directly.

One member asked me "Who were these people that supposedly existed at the time when Cain killed Abel? Were they the early humans(ape)?"

The early humans(ape) are a type of being that lies between human and monkeys.

I was serving Father one day in Boston while he was fishing for tuna. I was suddenly reminded of the question about Adam's family so I asked "Father! Who were the people who lived at the time when Cain killed Abel? Are they apes?" At this time, Father answered that God did not create apes.

Adam lived to become 930 years old. Father said that Adam gave birth to many children before he gave birth to Adam and Eve. Cain and Abel were selected to be providential people among those children and their names were recorded in the Bible.

Unless you were a providential figure, your name was not even recorded in the Bible. The people who were recorded to have existed at the time of Cain and Abel were their close relatives. Cain was afraid that they would kill him because he killed Abel, and begged to God, 'every one that findeth me shall slay me.' Then God left a mark on Cain.(Genesis 4:14~15)

115

Tree of providence

Father once drew a diagram of a large tree of providence on a blackboard. Father wanted to explain to us where we as individuals belong on this tree of providence. The reason for the drawing was that Father wanted us to clearly find our position as a member or as a leader.

This part is the root. Father said "I am Alpha and Omega, beginning and end, now and later." Also, Father said "I will harvest the fruit as I was the one who began it. I am the root, the stem, and the fruit." The fruits are his results and outcome.

Then where are we on this tree? We are one of the smaller branches. The responsibility of these branches is to keep hanging onto this tree of providence.

How will they hang on? Father says that the only method is through obedience. We must harbor no self-awareness. There is a common mistake made by pastors. When Father gives a direction, they act stubbornly in order to make results. Father is saying that he will sow the seeds and reap the fruits so just do as he tells them to do.

When fruits are being reaped, it is important to do as we are told. Father says that it is alright even if you cannot show any results. If Father tells you to do something else

while you are already working on something after upholding Father's direction, then we must have no second thought about stopping whatever we were doing and beginning the new work that Father told us to do.

Even though there are still only little providential result, we must follow the command. This is a matter of condition. It is important to set the standard of how much we are one in *shimjeong* of True Parents. We are creating conditions which Satan cannot accuse and this is the most important thing we must do. God can exert his infinite power if we create conditions that cannot be accused by Satan.

We must be obedient to Father's commands and must not criticize them even a little bit. Do not criticize True Parents, do not complain, and do not worry. These three things are what Satan likes the most and these are the conditions that allow Satan to accuse. The reason why we say do not criticize the works of Father, do not complain, and do not worry is because Father is moving the spirit world. We must therefore be unconditionally obedient.

There are many married couples who are about to receive the blessing who complain and try not to go through the indemnity stick ceremony. They say "Why must we beat our husbands or wives so cruelly with an indemnity stick?" They complain without even knowing the true meaning of the indemnity stick. They say they have already worked so hard to bring their husbands, who don't want to receive the blessing anyway, to the blessing, and why must they now beat them with indemnity stick. They criticize: "Why do we do a such barbaric exercise?" Father said "People say the most ignorant things when they do not even know how Satan can be taken out of their bodies." Then he continued, "They must do it because I am the only one who knows that."

Then why do we use the Holy Salt and what is the law of Holy Separation? Holy Salt was first made during True Parents' Holy Marriage. We now use it after it is multiplied by seven.

Using of the Holy Salt means that we are continuing the *shimjeong* of Father. Father deals with everything in the matter of *shimjeong*. It is because Adam and Eve fell at the stage of imperfection, in other words, the stage of imperfection of *shimjeong*. Father has attained the complete oneness with God with respect to *shimjeong*. Therefore, if we follow Father absolutely and become one in *shimjeong* with him, Satan will be taken away from us when

we naturally become one in *shimjeong* with God.

In conclusion, we must be well aware that everything Father does is closely

connected to the spirit world. As Father is the one who moves the spirit world, it may seem like his commands are illogical and unreasonable in this world but those who serve True Parents must make the right judgement.

There are also people who left the church among my own 36-couple group. Many of them were the type of people who consider themselves smart. They use their own judgement and say ‘ Father shouldn’ t do this.....’ They criticize a few things and in the end conclude that they cannot follow Father’s providence. That is why it is written in the Bible,

‘ to obey is better than sacrifice.’ (1 Samuel 15:22) Please remember this and do not make any mistake in your journey of following the path of Will.

I once received a very interesting revelation in my dream.

After we were expelled from Ehwa women’s university, we became an unwelcomed bunch. Professor Young Un Kim or Mrs. Won Bok Choi were at least kicked out from the university still holding the titles as professors so they could find other jobs and were treated with respect. However, people called me ‘ Surengi’ because my physical father was from North Korea. I didn’ t know what it meant at first but I looked around to realize that it meant ‘ a silkworm fed with mulberry that cannot produce any silk.’so people often called us "Oh, those Surengis". We were truly an unwelcomed bunch at the time. Our pride was hurt and we also worried about our future. We started worrying.

When my worries became great, Father appeared in my dream one night. The fourteen students including myself who were expelled from the school were sitting in a circle around Father at a particular mountain. Father, realizing of my such worries, spoke to me "I do not want money or knowledge from you. You have the innocence and love that is the purest in the world. You do not know how to criticize Father’s works. You do not even have a shadow of criticism toward the Teacher. You believe all that I do, you accept everything, and you have the heart of absolute obedience. Please know that that heart of obedience is more precious than anything in the world.

After that dream, I started to think ‘ I was right. It doesn’ t matter if we are not professors or ministers as long as we have the heart of absolute obedience towards Father.’

Then Father gave the name of ‘ Myeong Won Hoe(Association of Illuminating Circle)’ to the members expelled from the school. It meant ‘ You must expand in a round circle to illuminate this world brightly with your love.’

The members of Myeong Won Hoe became wrinkled grandmothers now but Father says we always look young in his eyes. If I wear something even just a bit bright, Father says "You still have the looks from when you were a college student!" It's been already 50 years since the incident but Father still remembers as such.

I want to tell you Father's Words that he gave to the members of Myeong Won Hoe.

"The root of your faith does not shake and your life therefore it is not wasted away. That is why you always look young."

Isn't it very poetic? Father's talking about the spiritual perspective. I was 23 when I first saw Father and Father was 36. Father was single at the time. I treated him like my older brother, like my father. Such days now remain inside me as beautiful memories.

In such a way, Father sees things with his spiritual eyes. Even though I am an old and wrinkled grandmother, Father still tells us "You guys always look young." It is said that when we shed our physical bodies and go to the spirit world, our appearance will be from the time we were the prettiest. I entered the church when I was 23. Therefore, my age in the spirit world will always be 23. I become happy whenever I think about how I will return to the spirit world and look 23 again.

117

¡°Obey and believe unconditionally"

There are two things we must know about Noah's family.

One of them is the question of why Noah had to be lying naked.

Was Noah following a plan made by someone else when he lied down naked? This

was of course God's work. So I'd like to ask you. Did Noah drink the wine according to his own will or did someone make him? God made him drink the wine. Such a thing happened because there was something that needed to be restored within Noah's family.

There is something more difficult to understand in Abraham's family. Abraham's family, at the time, was in the position of nobility since they were a family selected by God. However, do you think Abraham, who was selected as the ancestor of the chosen

people, sent his wife to the pharaoh without any reason? No. We can find the reason for this also in the Principle.

In other words, the central figures who are selected in the course of the providence acted according to the commands of God, and they played the role unconsciously. As I explained before, such things had to happen because God cannot hate Satan and God also wants to see his former servant return to his original position. Such secrets are only shared between God and Satan.

However, Father came to this Earth as the Messiah and unveiled this secret. We must understand that Father was able to unravel the secret of Restoration Providence because he was able to unveil the secret of the Fall,

Christians do not know the heart of God who was behind the Old Testament, the collection of the course of the Jewish people, and simply believe that it is a collection of model stories of faith made by Jewish people. For example, Christians teach that there are three kinds of faith: Noah's unchanging faith of building the ark, Abraham's faith of absolute obedience of leaving his hometown, and Jacob's prudent faith.

As we can see, the current theology does not even talk about the providence of restoration. The principle of restoration, on the other hand, unravels the step by step fall of Adam and Eve and that the illicit sexual relationship that was entangled in the process. The principle of restoration truly explains to us in detail all of the secrets of the human history.

Father says the following sometimes.

"After completing the Will, I may get drunk and lie on a street naked or dance around just as Noah did. Would you still follow me?"

Imagine. How would Father look like in such state? The person of such high status as True Parents and the King of All kings to one day just take off all of his clothes and dance naked, how would that look? Would you still be able to follow Father?

Also, what if Father suddenly becomes senile without any chance of recovery, unable to recognize anyone, saying 'Who are you? The national president?" Would you still be able to follow Father without changing.

As the number of people following Father increases, there will be good people, bad people, and people with little or no faith. Father will test the people in order to see who's who.

Noah was naked in his own room but Father may test the people by going out to the street and getting naked. Father asked us if we would still follow Father. I answered lightly "Yes!" but come to think of it now, I wonder if I would really be able to follow Father.

I hear that there are people these days who criticize Father from their own point of view. However, the people who are far away from Father do not commit the crime of

118

shimjeong. One can't commit sin without opportunity. We, who are close to Father, are the problem. Some people commit the crime of unfaithfulness because they talk back to Father at every chance. We must clearly understand what this crime of *shimjeong* is.

We didn't have anywhere to go after we were expelled from Ehwa women's university. Even though we were in such a difficult situation, Father did not care about it at all. Our own situations were not in Father's awareness. Even in such circumstance, Father said that the people of the world must come to him in order to listen to the Principle and then must go out to the world.

I felt that Father had his head up in the clouds, so I refuted Father whenever he said such things. "I believe your Words as the Words of the Lord but I think that will take some time. Such things will only be realized after we all go to the spirit world." Father said "No. It will happen while you are still alive." We all shook our heads in disbelief.

When I was working in America, there were 11 pastors, consisting from 36-couple families to younger family members. Father remembered all the things we said when we were little and he scolded us whenever we got together. "You! The things I said in the past are now becoming a reality, but who among you really believes what I said? Not one of you here believe in me." I could not raise my head because of shame. However, it was impossible to believe what Father was saying at that time. Circumstances were dire, persecution was strong, and we were weak.

Father saw things with his spiritual eyes and often said something completely out of the blue. "When I go to America, I should wear this mask worn by criminals. Women's lip stick will smear off my cheeks when they kiss. I should make a plastic mask of some sort and wear it so that women there can't touch my cheeks." I think Father said it because western women are more active in physical contact.

When I heard such Words, I thought 'Will such days truly come?' Father used to say things out of the blue like this very often so I shook my head in disbelief many times. When we were in America, Father remembered all this and said "If you are left in

Korea, you will all commit the sin of disbelief and go to hell when you go to the spirit world."

Father also said "You did not fully believe me during the early times but you still stuck with me and remained in the church. I can't send you to hell so I've brought you here to America to teach these young American members what kind of person I am. Then, I want you confess truthfully about how you were not able to believe in Father fully back in the days, repent, and through it you will bring salvation to the American members and you will be forgiven as well. This is why I have brought you to America."

To disobey Father even in our heart is same as when Noah's second son Ham became ashamed of his father's naked body, covered it with a sheet and ran away.

Noah did something that was unbelievable to others when he built the ark on the mountains of Ararat for 120 years. Noah was able to save his family at least by doing such unbelievable thing.

When we learn the entire principle of restoration required by God, we see that the principle of restoration is the principle of *shimjeong*. Father saved us by doing something we could not believe. Therefore, we must be optimistic about whatever Father does and just believe unconditionally.

We must obey and simply believe. Only then can we escape the accusations of Satan. Father knows this, and he makes us do these things so that Satan cannot accuse us.

119

Proclamations are important in the course of restoration

Father said this sometimes that, had he known about the Principle, Noah should have made a proclamation in front of his family members.

Noah was supposed to gather his family members in one place after the 40-day flood judgment was over and proclaim: "Listen carefully. I hereby proclaim that I have emerged victoriously from the 40-day flood judgment after arduous works of 120 years. As I make this proclamation, any of your mistakes from now on shall have no relation with my victory."

If he made such a proclamation, any crime committed by a member of his family would not invade the realm of the victory, the indemnity could have been made to be much lighter. However, Noah did not make such proclamation and even the 40-day flood judgment was invaded by Satan.

When searching for the Principle, Father deeply researched about the works of the central figures of past, thinking ‘ If he had done this in this position, he could have continued without failing.’ Father was able to overcome the mistakes made by Adam’s family, Noah’s family, and Abraham’s family because he knew about these things.

That is why Father makes a lot of proclamations. Father makes a proclamation whenever he completes a stage in the providence. Our church does a lot of rallies, and Father explains that he does these things to make us work and connect us externally to the victorious conditions made by Father so that we may not be spiritually accused by Satan.

Here is a handkerchief. What happens if we fold this into half and make a knot? We will get two parts. Then the upper part will be separated from the lower part. They become unrelated. Therefore, if the lower part does something wrong, it cannot advance upward to the other part because of this knot. Making a proclamation is making a knot such as this.

Father reports to God "I have come this far victoriously!" through the proclamations he makes in assemblies, and they are also proclamations to Satan, "You cannot invade anymore since I have made this many victories." In other words, Father is making a knot in front of God, Satan, the entire spirit world and the Physical World to solidify his victory. Noah however did not know about this.

Father said that he is not proclaiming to the participants of assemblies only. Also, Father’s assemblies do not end in just one place. These assemblies are Father’s making knots in the providence. Therefore, if we are to invite ten people, we must let hundreds and thousands of people know.

Not everyone who hears about the news of our assemblies may not actually come to our event but they at least will be attentive. They are at least aware that ‘ Who’s doing what and when.’ We aim for their attention. If we have their attention, it can work as a condition for the spirit world to help us. If the people in the Physical World become curious and attentive, their ancestors will already line up to cooperate.

There is this question I am always asked by the members when I visit America. "Mrs. Eu, we keep paying 100 dollars, 200 dollars, and 500 dollars everytime Father holds an assembly. However, nothing is really left when 500 or 1,000 people come, listen to the speeches, eat whatever food there is, clap few times, and leave. Wouldn’t the money better be used if we use it to go on one-on-one witnessing?"

Then I explain about Noah at such instances. Father’s proclamations in the assemblies have the purpose of planting the roots of Father’s great victory, and Father is advancing

the providence along with the spirit world. I explain to them that Father's assemblies are not to be taken from a practical point of view only. Then they say "Oh, is that right?"

Our church was bombarded by media from its early days. Mr. Eu became so angry

120

one day and said to Father in tears, "Father! Give me just one chance to prove to them that Unification Church is not a promiscuous group." However, Father became angry and replied "Stop trying to do frivolous things."

Father then added "Even Satan's works cannot happen without the permission from heaven. We are not losing anything because of this. They are promoting us for free, what's your worry? People will have more interest in our church if bad rumors against our church are spread. When people have more interest in our church, the spirit world will be able to cooperate."

Father said that when people hear bad rumors about our church, they always hear what kind of person Father is. Then more people will have interest in our church, and then the good ancestor spirits in the spirit world will work so that their descendents will become curious about our church and come to us to find out if the rumors are really true. There were many cases where such people became moved by Father and the Principle and joined our church. Therefore, people's misunderstanding and opposition are not always something to be avoided.

There was a rich man in the providence of Hokkaido, Japan. He often saw Father's face and opposition propaganda on TV, so he came to one of our churches and said "I don't think Rev. Moon is that a bad of a person. Rather, I think he is special. So please explain to me about The Unification Church." Then he accepted the explanations that were given to him. After hearing all the explanations from our members, he said "You guys seem to be doing good things. Is there anything I can help you with?"

One member told him that it takes a lot of money to do God's works. Then that man donated not a small sum of money that he inherited from his parents. As such, the good ancestor spirits in the spirit world keep pushing their descendants to go to the Unification Church.

On the other hand, if we buy an ad in the newspaper and say "Everything that has been posted in the newspapers is different from the truth," then Christians will gather force and retaliate by two or three fold. Father said that at that point, the fight will snowball.

We lack in financial resources and numbers. We have a busy schedule ahead of us and if we keep trying to fight, then we will tire ourselves out. As such, Father said that we should keep on walking our path if we have the money to fight.

Father explained that the oppositions from Christian churches are like children complaining to adults because they don't understand the things the adults do. Therefore, we must wait until they grow up and become adults themselves, and we must continue to walk our way.

People of the world are the descendants of fallen humanity so they are not interested in who did which good deeds. Such news of good deeds tends to disappear after they travel around to three different people. On the other hand, news like 'who killed who and who fornicated with who' draws attention from many people. Talk of good deeds by others live short but talks of bad deeds by others spread like wildfire.

People's fallen natures drive others to become more interested in bad things and want to know more. Therefore, if we are to draw the attention of such fallen people, we must let people say bad things about us. It is because we must draw their attention first in order to witness.

We should know that Satan does not say good things. Satan gladly says bad things, thinking that he is fulfilling his own will, but God takes hits and reclaims many folds later. It is not always a bad thing when people try to paint our church as an evil group.

Then why do newspapers and people persecute Father in this way? This is a serious problem. It is because we, the children of God's side, are afraid to openly testify about Father in fear of persecution.

121

The prayer method True Father taught us

Father taught me greatly how to pray.

Father taught us to pray to God in a way that makes God say 'Yes, I will realize your prayer even if that is the only thing that I will do.' He told us to pray so that you can really grasp God's interest.

I could not bear a child even the first three years since the blessing. Father told me to come one day and he said "I gave birth to my children, but what are you going to do with no children? Do you pray to God to give you a child?" When I answered "No. It's

a personal matter so I didn't feel that I could pray to God for such thing," Father said "No, you must pray to God!"

Then Father told me that when I pray, I should pray in a way that makes God says "This prayer is righteous. I should make it happen." Father told me to "Pray in a way that really grasps God's interest." So I asked him, "How do I pray in a way that grasps God's interest?" Father said "When you pray to God, don't just pray ' Please give me a child.' Rather, you should say ' How do we, the blessed families, make God's foundation on Earth? Is it not by creating a Four Position Foundation? Please allow our family to form that foundation.' You should pray like that." Father said we should say nothing other than that.

After hearing Father's instructions, I began to pray for the public matters first, and then prayed ' Heavenly Father! Please allow us, a family who has received the blessing of Heavenly Father, to form a Four Position Foundation." I prayed very sincerely. Then from three months before I actually became pregnant, many spiritually bright people received revelations from the heaven to pray for me.

Also, whenever there was a gathering of members, Father said "Gil Ja come out. Mr. Eu's wife, come out." So I would go out the front. Then Father says to me, in front of the entire audience, "You haven't given birth to a child yet while others gave birth to children just fine. Tell us about how miserable you feel." I felt so horrible when Father told me that. To be honest, I cried then. So I told the members there "Folks, please! Pray for me so I can give birth."

When I went inside of Father's room one day, Father told me "Gil Ja! You developed a lot of nerve these days." He teased me. So I inquired "Why?", Father teased more by answering "I hear you are begging to others to pray for you so you can have a child."

So I sincerely requested to Father, "Father! You can scold me as much as you want when we are alone but please don't embarrass me in front of many people." Then, the color of Father's face changed as he said "Hey! That's because you don't know! If you cry in front of that many people, the spirit world will take pity on you." Father said that the spirit world will become more sympathetic to you if the people here on Earth become sympathetic towards you. Father said that I would become pregnant faster because the spirit world will help me even greater. Father told me "You can become pregnant faster if I scold you." After such events, I did in fact become pregnant as Father had told me and I ultimately gave birth to three sons.

I learned this method from Father and used it on other people who couldn't give birth. When people hate me for my method, I tell them about my own personal experience of giving birth to children after Father's scolding.

There is someone who had a really unforgettable episode because of child-bearing. It's the family of the president of Segye Ilbo, Mr. Hwang Hwan Che. He had seven children, all of them were daughters. Mrs. Hwang was the vice president of The Women's Federation for

122

World Peace. After giving birth to three daughters, she worried she would give birth to another daughter when she became pregnant again. She was thinking about this while she was in the hospital to give birth to her new child. We normally panic when we are about to give birth to a child but that's what she was thinking.

I used Father's method here as well. I called Mrs. Hwang in the hospital and told her "Young Sook! You must have done something very bad. You must repent. You will give birth to a son only if you repent. You will never get a son otherwise." I pushed her like that. She then became frightened of me and tried to run away from me whenever she had a chance.

I once got a hold of her at Kimpo airport again after sending off some members. When I told her the same thing, she suddenly began to cry out loud. We were together with Kang Jung Won, who was one of my friends expelled from Ehwa university. Kang told me "Why did you have to make your friend cry." and the two made an alliance and scolded me back. I only applied the method I learned from Father. However, seeing them both upset about it made me feel bad as well.

But what else is there to do? I boldly put into practice the method I learned through my personal experience. Then guess what? She became pregnant the same month and gave birth to a son. That is Hwang Jin Su. He has already grown up and received the blessing.

When Mr. Hwang's wife gave birth to a son, I told her about the what had happened in Kimpo airport. I said "I cried many times in the past because Father scolded me for not being able to give birth. I felt that you had to cry if you were to give birth to a son so that's why I made you cry." Mrs. Hwang was able to accept my scolding only then. I'm so happy these days whenever I see Jin Su. He is the son his mother was able to have after shedding tears and that makes him more precious and lovely.

When I was active in America, there was a member by the name of Ikeno who was working with me. He had only three daughters and no son. So I scolded him openly in public for not being able to give birth to a son. Then later, his wife actually gave birth to a son. Mr. Ikeno later told me "After we received the scolding from you, we tried very hard to have a son." Then they asked me to name their new born child.

Whenever I see someone who can't give birth or give birth to a son, I scold in a similar way in front of people. If you see someone around you who is in a similar situation, scold them openly in public, even to the point of making them cry. They will be able to give birth once they shed tears. We do it not because we hate them, but because that is the most effective method in helping them to become pregnant.

This is a very precious method which I received from Father directly.

123

Chapter 9

Abraham's Family

Moses' Family

Abraham's failure to cut his offering in two

Father came to this Earth, found the Principle, and the Principle lectures began. Now, the Principle lectures are being given all around the world.

Whenever their names are called out during these lectures, Adam, Eve, Noah, and Abraham become apprehensive. When he listens to the portion of Principle lecture which deals with Abraham's family, Abraham laments, saying "Oh, I see now. It was such a great sin to not have divided the doves into two."

The central figures in the history of providence realize what their mistakes were after listening to the Principle. They beat their chests, saying "I know now." Then they lament, "How great could have it been if I did not make that mistake?" Just as when we speak of the devil, Abraham comes and listens when someone talks about him.

When we were serving Father in Cheongpa Dong, there were little reports of witnessing results. It was a time when we were not able to get any results due to so much persecution. For example, when a member reports to Father "I was beaten by my husband at home. I was persecuted at school." Father would sympathize with that person and cheer them up. Then people became competitive and everyone reported about how they were persecuted.

Father told us one day, "In the future, those who were never persecuted will envy their elder members who were persecuted so much."

Moreover, there were much news from the spirit world in the early days. One day, grandmother Jeong Seog On (The daughter of grandmother Kim Seong Do, the head of Holy Wine church. She used to have a very bright spiritual senses with the help of her mother, Kim Seong Do.) hastily came to Father, bowed, and said "Abraham says there

is one thing he truly wishes to tell you, Father." Knowing everything about it already, Father said in a big voice, "I don't want to hear! I don't have time to hear the words of those who have already gone to the spirit world. If I come to know about their situations, I have to start giving them attention and take care of them." He refused to hear Abraham's words.

The grandmother Jeong Seog On however did not back down and kept begging to Father for ten minutes, saying "I can't pray about anything else because Abraham bothers me so much. Please, Father! Please listen to his plea just once."

Father then said "What is it?" Then she told Father "Abraham says he did not know it was such a great sin to not cut the small dove in half. He only realized that it was after listening to a Principle lecture. Also, Abraham says he went through much hardship to make the offering. However, he says it wasn't he who did not cut the dove but was his servant. Abraham wanted me to tell you this."

After listening to this, Father laughed and said "O, Abraham! You are making excuses in advance in fear of getting scolded by me once I go to the spirit world." Father told us that servants do not have any power over the making of offerings. Abraham did not tell the servant to divide the dove into half. Father clearly explained that therefore the one who must take the responsibility of the uncut dove lies with not the servant but the master, Abraham.

There is no mention of the servant in the Bible. Father asked us if Abraham would have gone to the offering site alone. He brought many friends and servants. Father then said it is fun to look at Abraham making excuses like this. I still remember Father saying this.

124

125

Obedience of Isaac, perseverance and wisdom of Jacob

Father said one day "I envy Abraham. I envy that Abraham had an obedient son like Isaac." Isaac did not retaliate at all when Abraham took him up to the mountain to burn him as an offering. Isaac could not have become the sacrifice if he refused to become one and retaliated against his father.

Father said that sheep, goats, or cows cannot serve as offerings if they ever had diarrhea or have any flaws. The object of offering therefore must be very pure, clean, and obedient. It cannot become a offering otherwise.

Isaac grew up watching his father Abraham making offerings a lot. Therefore Isaac knew that he was to become an offering when his father tied him up. However, Isaac did not retaliate even when he knew what was going on. Father told us that this was the reason that Isaac led a pretty comfortable life for a central figure in the providence.

We can find Father's explanations about the offering of Isaac on page 292 of the 14th volume of <<Father's Speech>>.

"The blessing God promised to give to Abraham was a blessing of the world level. It was a blessing given to Abraham as an individual but since Abraham received the blessing as a representative of the world, it was the blessing upon which God's unchanging and eternal Will could pervade throughout the world.

Therefore, within that blessing, the family, clan, race, nation, and the entire world, everything was included. Abraham did not know the meaning of the blessing when he received it. God then later told him to take his only son, Isaac, up to the Mount Moriah and sacrifice him. We should think about this from our own practical point of view.

When we do, we would probably think that God is out of His holy mind. However, the reason why God commanded Abraham to do such thing was to judge the history and judge the age. God could not help but to bestow such command upon Abraham so that Abraham's descendants could create one standard upon the life and the actions of Abraham even though the rest of history would fail.

If God rules out human beings from his great Will because they are fallen beings, Satan will use that as a condition to attack human beings. Therefore, in order to bring Satan into complete subjugation and prevent Satan from attacking human beings, God had to make such a command.....

"The representative figures who were chosen for God's Will as such had on their shoulders the burden of not only taking the responsibility of the age in which they lived, but also the responsibility of creating a historical standard. We must understand that therefore they were always faced with corresponding hardships and persecutions."

Next is regarding Jacob.

Jacob was born as the younger brother of two twin boys. His mother Rebekah cooperated with him because she received a revelation.(Gen. 25:21~25, and the elder shall serve the younger.) Rebekah wanted for her younger son Jacob to be in the position of elder son.

Jacob tricked Esau twice in order to take Esau's eldership. Jacob tricked his brother once with lentil stew and tricked him again when receiving Isaac's blessing.

However, that actually wasn't the correct way according to the Principle. Had Jacob wanted to inherit the rights of the elder son, he should have served and behaved well to his older brother. Then, the elder son's heart would have been moved and he would have said "Yes, you are not only smarter than me but better in every aspect. So you should be my older

126

brother." If Jacob brought his older brother into natural subjugation like this, so much could have been saved in the course of indemnity.

Father knew that this was exactly what Jacob was supposed to do, so Father served grandmother Park Eul Ryong and Mr. Kim Baek Moon who were both in the elder son's position. Father once said "I even washed her [Park Eul Ryong's] underwears for her."

If their hearts remained unmoved, then the spirit world would not testify to them about Father and they would receive no revelation. The reason Father served them so tenderly is that he should not walk the same failed course of the central figures in the providence of restoration. In other words, he had to avoid being accused by Satan.

Jacob then fought an angel and won. Father said that this had great providential importance.

After a 21 year arduous course in Haran, Jacob sent a reconnaissance to his homeland before returning. He found out that his older brother was waiting for him with 400 servants. Jacob must have been terribly scared of this. 400 is not a small number.

Jacob must have felt that his older brother still wanted to kill him. Thinking that his entire, arduous course of work would turn to nothing, he sincerely prayed to God, ' Please protect me from my older brother who wants to kill me.' God listened to his prayer and sent an angel in order to protect Jacob.

Jacob wrestled with the angel sent by God all night long. When the angel was about to leave as the sun was rising, Jacob however held onto the angel by his ankle and refused to let him go unless the angel would give him his blessing. The angel broke Jacob's thigh bone and gave him the blessing.

The angel needed to give him the blessing in order to restore through indemnity the condition with which Satan could accuse Jacob because Jacob tricked his older brother Esau twice. It was also to relieve the angry heart of Esau who wanted to kill Jacob. That is why we hit each other's butt when we receive the blessing. It has the meaning of separating Satan from us because Adam and Eve fell by using their thigh bones in a wrong fashion. Then the angel told Jacob "Your name will be 'Israel' from now on." The angel gave him the blessing as such and left.

Then who was the angel? The angel was identical to Esau's spiritual body. In other words, Esau was the substantial body of the angel; the fact that Jacob won the fight against the angel made a condition that he could win against the angel's substantial body, Esau, as well. As Jacob won against the angel, the spirit world would prevent Esau from killing his brother even if he had come out with an intention to do so. Esau therefore could not hold his enmity and his intention to kill Jacob for long even if he had such intentions. As Jacob made the victorious spiritual condition, Esau could not help but to embrace Jacob.

So Jacob went to see his older brother Esau, limping. Jacob then wisely said one thing that really melted his brother's heart. Esau and Jacob were twins so they look very much alike. Jacob was scared that his brother might kill him, but as soon as he saw Esau, he bowed down low and said "seeing your face is like seeing the face of God."

I believe Esau's cold heart was completely melted with that one sentence. Esau did not forget for one moment what had happened with Jacob in the past. If Jacob, who'd already taken stolen God's blessing had reappeared in front of him with smug attitude, how angry would Esau have become? However, Jacob came, bowed to him seven times, and said these words. Esau must have been speechless. How wise was Jacob? Father said that his providence is also like that of Jacob.

We must be thankful about Jacob's effort to gain the victory. One thing that we must understand from this is that we must obey Father absolutely. Father said "As Jacob brought Esau into subjugation after first achieving the spiritual victory, if you do exactly as I tell you to do, and follow me with Absolute Faith, Absolute Love, and Absolute Obedience, you will be able to achieve anything."

127

Father has already achieved complete victory against Satan so that we may bring great results in whatever we do. Therefore, instead of doubting our ability, we must push forward. If we become one in heart with Father and move, Satan cannot interfere with us and we will accomplish whatever we set out to do.

Father said often, "Even if the things I tell you to do are not achieved right away, it will certainly happen if you hold onto your faith tightly and keep trying."

When we look at it this way, Korean people are much more spiritual than foreigners. It is because Korean people from the ancient time have worshipped not only Jesus but Buddha and mountain gods. Korea could not have endured so much suffering of the past if the people did not pray to the spirit world. Korean people's long history of praying to heaven or mountain gods helped to develop their spiritual senses.

When Father tells us to do something, we do things like all-night vigilant prayers or 7-day fasting in order to create good conditions. It is the same as how Jacob spiritually fought the angel and made the condition for his older brother Esau to come to Jacob and bring himself into subjugation.

I'm always reminded of a fun story when I think of Sun Moon University in Cheon An in Chung Nam province.

When we first tried to buy land so that we could build the university, the land owners would not sell their land to us. It was a good piece of land so Ehwa university tried to purchase it but they were unsuccessful. However, we convinced over 300 land owners and succeeded in buying the land.

The Christians among the owners especially were the most adamant in the refusal to sell their land to us. Many of them made an excuse by asking where they would relocate their ancestral graveyards to. Mr. Park Jung Hyeon. He now lives in America and was the one who spearheaded this purchase at the time. When he was working to convince the land owners, he tried to persuade them by arguing that it is much better for their descendants and this town if a school is built, rather than other things such as factories.

After much persuasion, the town's people were all in favor of building a university on their land, but they still wanted help in relocating their ancestral graveyards. There were 300 owners in total but the graves they were responsible for numbered in the thousands. Also, a big problem was that these grave sites were passed down from their ancestors. This posed a great difficulty. We just understand that Sun Moon University was not built easily.

The Foundation of our church invited these 300 land owners along with their wives (600 people in total) to the Little Angels Art Hall. They were fed good food and they enjoyed the performances of Little Angels. Then the people from the Foundation persuaded them, "Ladies and gentlemen! Rev. Moon built such a beautiful middle school and highschool. How even more beautiful it would be if he builds an

university?" The land owners however were still unconvinced because of the unresolved problem of relocating their ancestral graveyards.

Since they were using their graveyards they had an excuse not to sell the land. The members around Ohn Yang, Cheon An, and Asan did a relay 40-day vigilant prayer condition three times in a row. Father went there also twice and I followed him. Father climbed up the Mount Sambong and offered a very serious prayer, and he also gave Words to the members who were offering the prayer condition.

Then as the third and last 40-day prayer's end came near, one of the members had a very interesting dream.

In his dream, each grave had a hole in it and the spirits within came out of their graves waist high. Then a spirit who served as the captain among them said "We have to vacate this place and go to a new place. Where should we go?" The rest of the spirits followed his lead and sang in unison, 'Where shall we go?' The behavior of the spirits in the dream looked as if the behavior of a pack of birds, their heads all pointing to one place while they move.

128

The looks on their faces as they were singing 'Where shall we go?' did not look as if they were angry. Rather, they looked happy and looked as if they felt they wanted to move. However, they still thought 'We are in complete agreement with building an university here where we rest so that the generations to come can be educated, but the problem remains as to where we shall go.' This particular member, who had the dream, saw that the ancestors are ready cooperate as such. Father was very glad when he heard this report.

This is what I felt when I heard this report. Father sometimes mobilizes the wives of blessed families to go out and witness on short notice. When Father gives such a command, the wives become busy and start worrying about who will take care of their husbands and children. I felt that what the ancestors were doing was very similar to what the wives do when they have to prepare for a mobilization.

As we become busy and start running around here and there once Father gives his command, the ancestors were busy trying to figure out a way to come up with a solution to their problem.

It was still difficult however. It is said that spirits are very reluctant in yielding their places. For example, if there is a highway construction that has to go through a mountain, some people die in the process of creating a tunnel. When a spiritually bright

person looked at such a construction site, he could see that the ancestors in the spirit world were holding their arms wide, trying to prevent the construction because they do not want their houses to be dug up. Whenever he sees such ancestors, people die in an accident. This is how spirits try to protect their graves.

The person who had the dream was sure that the land owners would sell their land since their ancestors came to the agreement to relocate. Truly, all the land owners agreed, 'Let's sell!' and they sold their land to us for a very cheap price soon after the last 40-day prayer condition finished.

The land owners today regret very much about selling the land. They think "Were we possessed at the time? Why did we sell so cheaply? We could have made much more money if we held onto the land." Our church has a lot of similar stories.

If you run into a brick wall of a very difficult problem in your ministerial work, you must offer much *jeongseong* in order to create a spiritual condition for victory just as Jacob put his life on the line and won the fight against the angel. Abraham's family teaches us that we can reap victory over all problems with similar methods.

129

Lessons from Joseph's course

Let us now talk about Joseph's course.

Father said that he often thought about Joseph when he received persecution from Christian churches in the early days. Joseph was Jacob's eleventh son and he was very smart. Jacob loved Joseph and Benjamin more than his other sons. His other sons naturally became jealous of them.

Moreover, the ten brothers' mother was different from Joseph's. So these ten brothers tried to kill Joseph but ended up selling him to an Arabian merchant, who then took Joseph to Egypt where Joseph spent some hard times. Joseph however was able to become the acting Prime Minister of the nation in a heartbeat because he was able to decipher the Pharaoh's dream with the help of heaven.

Egypt and its neighboring nations were suffering from a great famine at the time, and this was God's work of bringing Jacob and his sons into Egypt. Joseph's brothers came to Egypt with empty rice bags to beg for some rice. Joseph recognized his brothers instantly. The brother couldn't even imagine that Joseph would be alive.

Joseph recognized them however, sat them down in order, and gave them food. The brothers thought something was strange. The brothers asked Joseph how he was able to know exactly the order of the brothers. Instead of answering their question, Joseph came back to his room and started crying out loud. Only after many tears, he came out, wiped his face so his brothers wouldn't notice, and asked them "Is the youngest one still alive? Is your Father still alive?"

Father explained about the heart of Joseph at the time. Father told us Joseph was of course mad at his brothers who sold him to the merchant. Joseph could have felt that now his brothers were in his mercy and he could have made up his mind to kill him, but he didn't.

Then why did Joseph treated his brothers so well instead of taking revenge? It was because Joseph thought that even though they came from a different mother, they were the ones who took care of his father when he was alone in a foreign nation.

Joseph then brought his father and his brothers to Egypt. It is recorded in the Bible that the Pharaoh gave the grace of giving his chariots to Joseph's family to bring them to Egypt when he heard that the acting Prime Minister Joseph has reunited with his brothers. Joseph was then able to bring his father Jacob and his brothers and their families to Egypt.

However, Father said that when Joseph invited his father's family, he had to bring not only Joseph's family members but Esau's as well. Father said that then the current struggle in the Middle East could have been prevented and that this is an imperfection in Joseph's course.

The American House of Representative invited Father soon after he went to America. They wanted to see how this man from Asia brainwashed their white children. With that kind of intention, they invited Father to give a lecture in the house of representative.

The lecture Father gave at the time included that ' the Jewish people who were to receive and serve Jesus rather killed him from disbelief. This is a grave historical mistake.'

It is difficult to live in America once you incur the wrath of Jewish people. It is because Jewish people control the polity, economy, academy, and the banking industry. Many important positions in America are filled by Jews. When Israel comes into conflict with neighboring nations, doesn't America normally help Israel? America's middle and upper class are mainly occupied by Jews. If you get on their bad side in America, it becomes very difficult to live there.

There is another story that explains this point well. There is a place called Mount Kisco at the outskirts of New York. It has beautiful sceneries. We purchased a building twenty years ago that were used as a dormitory of Catholic nuns. There were many Jewish people living there, and there were upper class folks such as doctors, lawyers, and professors. These people collected signatures and filed petitions to prevent moonies(the members of Unification Church who follow Rev. Moon) from living there. It is such a good building but it has been left vacant for over 20 years.

The reason Father is so hated by Jewish people is because of the lecture he gave at the House of Representatives. People who were close to Father at the time urged to Father to take out that line because it would be impossible to settle in America if we get on the bad side of Jewish people. Father however ignored everyone and said "I put my life on the line already when I came to America. Whether I go to prison, when I get shot, such things do not matter. I cannot hide the truth and I cannot bend according to other's will." Father picked the moment and proclaimed his Words in the House.

Jewish people began their work of killing Father once Father made such a proclamation in the House. Jewish people received much persecution throughout history so they do not take their revenge on the superficial level. Instead of charging from front, they persecute their enemy from behind in the shadow.

Father told Jewish people, who firmly believe that nobody can be the messiah because Elijah did not come to Earth riding on clouds, that the Jews murdered Jesus. He furthermore said that the Nazis killed six million Jews as a payment of indemnity for the Jews. There was no way Jews could be favorable towards Father. Jews defined Jesus as an anti-christ and therefore proceeded to kill him. Their pride was scarred when this Rev. Moon fellow talked about how their ancestors had sinned.

Christians believe that they were saved through the crucifixion of Jesus. They naturally become angry and think of Father as their enemy since Father says that the crucifixion of Jesus meant that Jesus was not able to fulfill his mission while on Earth. Communists also hate Father because they are atheists.

Father says that there are three great archangels in this world. One is America, the other is The Soviet Union, and the last is China. These three nations have one thing in abundance that other nations lack. America is an archangel nation because it has a lot of Christians, Soviet Union is an archangel nation because it is most abundant in land, and China is also an archangel nation because it has a large population.

Father said that these things originally belong to God and they are only entrusted with management. The archangel's role is not to own but to manage.

Father does not care about the opinions of Jews or Christians but he still admits to their good works. Then he tells us to look at Joseph.

Father says that Jewish people worked so hard throughout the history for 4,000 years in order to protect monotheism, their God Jehovah. In the past, everyone believed in polytheism. However, Jews were the only people who believed in monotheism at that time.

Jews believed and held onto their one and only God for 4,000 years without changing. Therefore, just as Joseph gave credit to his brothers for taking care of his father Joseph when he was away in a foreign nation, Father gave credit to the Jewish people for serving God in the position of the eldest son before Father was born. Father said that Judaism is the eldest son, Christianity the second son, and The Unification Church is the third son. Father says no one can match the great works of Judaism, who endured 4,000 years of suffering in order to serve God. We must understand that and give them their due credit.

Then Christianity held onto Jesus in heaven and served God on this Earth for 2,000 years while going through exactly the same kind of difficult course as that of Jewish people. Christians shed much blood and many died in martyrdom. Father says that when he thinks of such pain that had to be endured by Christians, he can't help but to forgive them.

131

Father sometimes throws curse words at Christians but he says he thinks of Joseph when he becomes really angry. Just as Joseph forgave his brothers instead of taking revenge and fed them and embraced them, Father says he also makes determination to be God's third son. We should understand Father's tearful heart.

My eyes fill with tears whenever I think about Joseph embracing his brothers in reconciliation. I gave many lectures in America with this story.

So what kind of person is Father? We can summarize that Father is like Joseph who does not take revenge, who does not repay his enemy with enmity, who rather sacrifices himself for his enemies, and who brings his enemies into natural subjugation by moving their heart.

132

The anger of Moses

Moses was truly a brave leader filled with a sense of justice. However, his anger was his weakness.

Moses's mother became his nanny and educated him to have a great sense of patriotism about the nation of Israel by telling him "You are an Egyptian outside but really a Jew inside."

Moses grew to be a healthy man. One day, he was passing by a labor camp and saw an Egyptian soldier beating on his fellow Israelite. Moses looked around and saw that there was no one else. So Moses killed the Egyptian. However, the word got out and the Pharaoh tried to kill Moses. Moses fled to the wilderness.

He remained 40 years in the wilderness before he led the Israelites out of Egypt; it was recorded that the number was '600,000 men strong.' '600,000 men strong' means that there were actually millions of people when we include the women and children. However, so many millions of Israelites suffered due to their lack of faith and fell in the wilderness.

When he saw the Egyptian beating down his fellow Israelite, Moses had to hold back his anger and wait for the right time for revenge to come.

Moses was in a very difficult circumstance when God protected him. All new born sons were put to death around the time Moses was born. However, with the help of his mother and his older sister, Moses was adopted by the Pharaoh's daughter. That particular princess did not have a son. That is why when she saw the baby Moses floating down the Nile river in a papyrus basket, she thought "Oh, this is a Jewish child. He looks so pretty. I will adopt him and raise him as my own." This however was not her own thought. God planted this thought in her.

The Pharaoh did not have any other sons so Moses was next in line to become Pharaoh. Moses could have helped his people once he became Pharaoh. If he told the Egyptians, 'You have put my people under great suffering and labor. However, we will become the royalty now and you Egyptians will become our slaves.' he could have turned everything upside down instantly. However, such things could not happen because of his anger. This is something Father feels very sad about.

While talking about Moses' fits of anger, Father said "I am a human being just like you but I have two differences. The first is that I have overcome the self-centered greed, and the other is that I have overcome the self-centered fits of anger. We can accomplish anything if we overcome these two things completely.

It is bad to have self-centered thoughts and self-centered greed. However, Father said that self-centered anger is even worse than that. We can learn this from Moses. If Moses' could have held back his anger, not only would he not have had such miserable fate, but his people also would not have died in such miserable ways. A group with a leader who can't control his anger is bound to decline.

Father received a lot of training to walk the course of the Messiah. Father said "I wasn't a good person from the beginning. I was impatient, I had a strong desire for revenge, and I didn't like losing. However, I bit my tongue and trained myself to be able to walk the Messianic course."

Father said that anyone who can dominate his self-centered greed and fits of anger can accomplish anything. It is because that person's conscience respects him.

We may be able to deceive everyone around us but we cannot deceive our conscience. How could we deceive our conscience when it is rooted in God? Our conscience

133

accuses us, "Hey, you. You did such and such wrong things, didn't you? Why did you!". When our conscience accuses us like that, we lose strength in our body and we fall flat on the ground.

However, when our own conscience respects us, we can have competence in whatever we do and can achieve victory in anything.

134

God's sorrowful heart was embedded in the stone tablets

Another important thing in the course of Moses is the stone tablets.

There are ten commandments engraved on the stone tablets. You will know this too when you have a chance to visit Israel. I could see when I sent to Israel that the people there copy their law, called 'Torah,' onto a thin sheet of paper, roll it up, and stick it in the doorjamb. They then make a small hole in the doorframe, put the torah in it, and touch and kiss whenever come in and out of the house. They touch and kiss it so much that they become sparkling.

That's how much importance they bestow upon their law. However, the course that led up to God's giving of these commandments was also of great sadness.

Father until that time could not speak directly to the sages. In the case of Noah, God only appeared in his dreams and said “Noah, build an ark in such and such manner.” God was not able to speak to Noah directly. It was because they were still in the position of the servant of servants.

God then found Moses and called him his representative. God was able to talk to Moses directly because the foundation was prepared then for God to be able to talk to Moses directly.

Moses however told God “I am slow of speech and tongue.” Then God told Moses “I know that your brother Aaron can speak well. You will speak unto him and he will move the people for you.”

However, Aaron later led all the people to the path of unbeliever when he allowed them to create a golden statue of goat and dance around it. Satan accuses God when Israel people fall into disbelief. Then the Israelites cannot go to God directly and God’s Will cannot be accomplished. Even though they cannot go directly to God, however, they could still go to God indirectly through upholding the ten commandments(the law) strictly.

Moses’ ten commandments(the stone tablets) became a stone wall that divided God and the Jewish people who did not believe in God. Father said what is very sad here is that God wanted to speak to the Israelites directly but he couldn’ t because of their disbelief.

We must know that there is a sad story behind Moses’ ten commandments(the stone tablets) which, in the end, worked to divide God and human beings.

135

A story about Moses’ 40-day fast

I want to tell you here a sad story about Moses’ 40-day fast.

This happened when we were still in the Old Headquarters church in Cheongpa-dong Yongsan-gu, Seoul. There was a woman who joined our church with the guidance of Moses. She used to be Catholic, was very energetic, and prayed very well too. I thought she would be a great addition to our church activities. Then she attended the church regularly for a while. One day she came to the church with a big bag and gave a full bow to Father.

Father asked her where she was going and she answered “I am following Moses’ direction and going to go to Mount Samgak to do 40-day fasting twice.” Father became angry and said “You are going to do what?”

The woman started explain: “Moses told me that when people lecture the Principle, they only talk about how Moses did 40-day fasting twice, received the tablets twice, and went through so much suffering for leading a huge group of people. He told me that people do not focus on the good things he did. He then begged me to understand and know his heart. He said if I could do a 40-day fast twice, he will give me all the miracles and powers that God gave him.” In other words, it seemed Moses in the spirit world had seduced her.

After listening to her answer, Father began to talk to her, this time in a gentle voice as if trying to persuade a child: “Moses is lying. Even the things that the spirits of highest status say are true only 80 percent of the time. The spirit world is the archangel realm and the Physical World is the Abel realm since I am still alive. You should not believe the things the spirit world says but instead believe me. Even the spirits with high status sometimes try to satisfy their greed by using the people in the Physical World with lies. Moses was able to do 40-day fast twice not because of his own power but thanks to the power of God. He was barely able to finish the two 40-day fasts because God fed him spiritually. You will starve to death if you fast 40 days twice. Also, even the powers of Moses were given to him by God. Moses did not do it own his own. Moses can never give such powers to you. Therefore, if you are willing to fast 40 days twice, you should redirect that energy and go pioneer new churches twice.” She became saddened and silently went out the door later. She never returned.

There was also another woman who was the mother of a male 777-couple member. She was the kind of person who offered a lot of *jeongseongs* to heaven. She started a 40-day fasting and then kept insisting on continuing her fasting even when the 40-day was over. She went beyond 60 days and then, as if a candle would quietly burn out, went to the spirit world quietly.

Father said that it is impossible for a human being to fast 80 days with his power alone. We must understand that it may be possible with the spiritual help from God but our physical bodies have a limit that makes certain things completely impossible.

Father says that Moses is always saddened when he hears people giving a lecture about his course. It is because people normally focus on his mistakes of striking the rock twice and do not talk as much about all the suffering he had to endure after leaving Egypt. This is very uncomfortable for Moses to take.

Chapter 10

The Parallel Ages and the Providence of True Parents

Parallel History is the providential understanding of history discovered by Father

In the second part of Divine Principle, we can find the history of Jewish people, of Christianity, of the western world, and the whole world. Also, the Principle of Restoration explains about the parallels between two ages that the 400 years of Roman persecution was the indemnity age for the 400 years of Egyptian persecution. Then we see that from one point to another is 120 years, another is 210 years, and we see that the numbers in the parallel ages are orderly.

When we closely examine how human history has been developing, we can discover that similar situations are repeating themselves. We can deduce from this that human history is developing in the form of a spiral, repeating the similar situations that had already happened in the past.

When we look at the picture, A, A' , and A' ' represent the historical figures who were called upon for their own respective age. Also, the bold lines beneath A, A' , and A' ' on the chart symbolize that particular historical event similar to that of their predecessor had happened.

When similar events occur in different ages, we call these periods the Parallel Providential Periods.

This was something no one else was able to find. When historical periods are recorded, they only mention which period began at which time and how. Then they mention how the time period ended and what each person did along the way. Most of human history is a subsequential recording of external events. Some historians came up with their own understanding of history but no one was able to come up with the exact providential understanding of history from the perspective of restoration.

God sends a central figure in order to create a foundation to send the Messiah, but if the central figure fails, then God sends another. As God has to force the new figure to indemnity and restore the mistakes of his predecessor, God has to make him do similar things. That is why history has been evolving in a spiral fashion.

Father used to say "Search from this point to that point. It will be 120 years." This is how the chart that explains about Parallel Providential Periods was created.

Parallel Providential Periods are divided into three stages of 2,000 years each: The period in the Age of the Providence to Lay the Foundation for Restoration(2,000 years from Adam to Abraham), the Period in the Age of the Providence of Restoration(2,000 years from Abraham to Jesus), and the Age of the Extended Providence of Restoration(2,000 years from Jesus to the Returning Lord).

From Abraham to Moses is 400 years, from Jesus to St. Augustine is 400 years, and from Moses to the King Saul is 400 years, and from St. Augustine to Charlemagne the Great is also 400 years. Similar events happened within these different periods in history. That is why everything is revealed when we closely examine the Parallel Providential Periods. Just as we discover hidden shells when we dig in the sand, Father pulls out these significant periods. That is why the Parallel Periods is Father's unique providential understanding of history.

Mr. Eu Hyo Won wrote in his diary that "Chapter 5 of the second part of Divine Principle is truly mesmerizing and it gets even deeper as I read it and contemplate. Father has found the periods and lengths of the ages of restoration providence that no one in the history could find."

Israelites are the chosen people who were central in advancing the Age of the Providence of Restoration which began from Abraham, and therefore the history of Jewish

137

people became very important material in understanding that particular period in history. Also, Christians were the chosen people who were central in advancing the Age of the Prolongation of the Providence of Restoration. The history of Christianity therefore offers important insight into understanding that specific age. Then naturally, the history of Korean people who are the third Israelites centering on the Returning Lord becomes an important material for this age.

138

The dispensation of forty in separating Satan for the Foundation on the national level

It is very important to understand how the Parallel Periods of restoration history are unfolding in today's age.

This is a picture that explains that advancement. (It will be easier to understand this chart when you read this section of the Divine Principle first.)

The most important part in Chapter 5 of the Principle of Restoration is the World Wars. The first world war was a war that prepared the foundation upon which Father could be born as the messiah. There were also other significant events in the history of mankind that served as the preparation for the birth of one man, which is our Father, such as The Renaissance, The Reformation, and Abel and Cain understanding of human life.

From the Principle's point of view, Korea had to form a foundation on the national level after the dispensation of forty to separate Satan. This is for the restoration of cosmic Canaan and only then could Korea become the nation that can welcome the messiah.

The direct descendants who shared the blood lineage of Abraham and who escaped the persecution of Egypt upholding the Will of God were the first chosen Israelites. The Christian followers who upheld resurrected Jesus, who was crucified after being accused by the first Israelites of heresy and who inherited the works of the providence of restoration, were the second Israelites.

There was a high chance that the Returning Lord would be persecuted by the Christians just as Jesus was persecuted by the first Israelites, so God had to choose the people who upheld the Returning Lord as the third Israelite in order to complete the third age in His providence. The Korean people who upheld the returning Lord and who had the mission of completing God's third providence had to become the third Israelites.

In order to create a number 40 foundation to separate Satan to begin the National Courses to Restore Canaan, the chosen people of first Israelites went through the suffering course of 400 years under Egypt which represented the Satanic world at the time. Similarly, the second Israelites as well fought and won their 400 years long battle against the persecution of The Roman empire which represented the Satanic world at the time in order to begin the Worldwide Course to Restore Canaan.

Therefore, in order for Korean people, the third Israelites, to create the number 40 foundation of separating Satan to begin the Cosmic Level Course to Restore Canaan, Korean people had to suffer persecution under certain nations for a period that corresponds with number 40.

Korea became a part of Japan in 1910 but Korea had already lost its independence in 1905 when its diplomatic rights were taken entirely by the Empire of Japan. Korea became a colony of the Empire of Japan and had to endure 40 years of persecution.

Japan's colonization of Korea and its subsequent persecution of Korean people was same as when Eve stood on the reverse position to become Adam's subject. Korea, as

the Adam nation where messiah was to be born, had to restore through indemnity the reverse subjective position Eve took towards Adam in the Garden of Eden.

From the perspective of Principle, Japan's 40 year long domination happened not purely because of human will but because of the need to fulfill God's providence of restoration. When we understand the Principle, Korean people must not hate or harbor resentment towards Japanese people. Now that the messiah has come, Korea can restore Adam's realm of dominion, and Korea and Japan can become happy together while serving the Lord.

The first world war that started in 1914 ended in 1918, and the Mansei movement

139

happened on the first day of March in 1919. Upon such a foundation created by our people with much blood, Father was born in the next year, on January 6, 1920(Lunar). Then on August 15, 1945, when the first number 40 cosmic period of indemnity ended, Korean people were able to regain their independence.

140

Christianity failed to serve Father following independence

Father began to appear as the Returning Lord on this Earth after the end of World War Two. Korea welcomed its independence from Japan when the World War Two ended in 1945. The victors of the World War Two were key Christian nations: America, Britain, and France. Three years later in 1948, the Republic of Korea established its own body of government.

Many patriots including Mr. Kim Gu traversed the northern and southern side of the peninsula in hopes of creating a unified Korea. However, their efforts to build a unified government failed, because a communist government had already nestled itself in North of the 38th parallel line and the southern side of the nation had been under the rule of American military for the past three years. In 1948, the Republic of Korea made its own government separated from north.

If the Christians at the time did not oppose Father for seven years from 1945 to 1952, Father said that he could have appeared in front of the world as the Lord.

In our nation, there were two different types of Christians: the Cain-type Christians and the Abel-type Christians. The Abel-type Christians were those who refused to bow down to the Japanese empire during the Japanese colonization period and protected

their standard of faith even if it meant martyrdom. The groups led by Kim Seong Do or Heo Ho Bin, which were composed of many spiritually bright people, were the Christians who were willing to sacrifice themselves only for the Will of heaven.

Father sought the Abel-type Christian groups as soon as Korea gained its independence. Father was the perfected Adam, and the perfected Adam needed the restored Adam and Eve.

From the position of restored Adam, Mr. Kim Baek Mun testified for Father. Mr. Kim Baek Mun testified to Father that Father is the one to take the highest throne, saying, "You are the one who have come with the glory of Solomon." However, just as John the Baptist who testified to Jesus but did not follow him because of his doubt, Kim Baek Mun also did not follow Father even after testifying to him. Then the spiritually bright people among the followers of Mr. Kim Baek Mun received a revelation telling them "Do not follow Mr. Kim but follow now Mr. Moon." When Mr. Kim Baek Mun denied to accept even that, Father could not gain his substance of faith and left for North Korea.

Father went to North Korea to find the woman who called herself ' the wife of Jehovah.' The grandmother Kim Seong Do also passed away without fulfilling her mission and Ms. Heo Ho Bin also died as a martyr inside a prison because she received Father's letter when she was in prison but did not follow Father's command.

Next was the grandmother Park Eul Ryong. Father worked for her as if he was her servant, even to the point of washing her underwear. Mrs. Park Eul Ryong also testified that Father is the Lord but soon thereafter began to doubt him. Failing to serve Father as the substantial Lord, she became insane and left.

Father received the testimonies from spiritual Abel-type Christians but they failed to serve Father as the substantial Lord. In the end, heaven had to send Father to the Heungnam prison camp in order to protect Father's life from the ever-growing persecutions from Christians. Father gained his freedom after the Korean War began and he fled to South.

The spiritual Abel-type Christians failed to fulfill their mission as such. If these people fulfilled their mission, they could have easily absorbed the Cain-type Christianity, and the Will of heaven could have been completed. So the Abel-type Christianity had to accept and serve Father as the Lord.

The Cain-type of Christians were those who succumbed to the pressure and bowed down to the Japanese emperor. They served both Jesus and the Japanese emperor. Then

141

they formed the intelligent part of the society. The government did not take their wealth and they went to America to receive high-level of education. When the rule of American army started, they needed intelligent people who could speak English, so they ended up hiring any capable people including pro-Japan people.

The Cain-type Christians gathered under the banner of Lee Seung Man's Freedom Party. Father wrote a letter to one of the close aids of the president Lee Seung Man and told him about Father's vision, but there was no way a group such people who were filled with worldly greed could have accepted Father's message. Accepting Father's message meant for them that they would have to lose their foundation so they started throwing severe persecution at Father. Father was rejected by the Cain-type Christianity because even the Abel-type Christianity failed to accept Father.

142

Restoration of elder son's position in 1985

The World War Two began in 1939 and ended in 1945. Father said that had Christians accepted Father, heaven on Earth could have been realized in seven years until 1952. This was God's plan. However, the Christians who had to follow the Messiah did not follow him. Then the providence was extended for forty years.

What's forty years after 1945? It's 1985. Father was in America at the time. Then he went to Danbury prison. Why did Father go to Danbury prison?

Father told the members of 36 couples to come to America. I went to America in February of 1983, but the men of the 36 couples went to America from as early as 1982. I stayed active in America for about nine years. Then I came to Japan in July of 1991 when Father told me to pack up and go help the providence in Japan. That was an important period in the providence when Father met Gorbachev and Kim Il Sung in order to bring the world of communism into complete subjugation. Then why did Father have to go to Danbury prison? Moreover, why did Father have to go to America?

Many people have questions about this. Why did Father have to do his work in America?

There are three brothers in America. These three brothers believe and worship the same God as their Father. The eldest son is Judaism, the second son Christianity, and the

third son is Unification Church. America is the only place where these three brothers reside in the same country. That is why Father had to go to America.

Jewish people, who were the eldest son, started coming to America in great number at the time of the World War Two. It was because Hitler persecuted Jews. Hitler wanted his Germanic people to be recognized as the best race in the world but his dream was interfered by the Jews. Realizing that the Jews were better than his own people, he killed six million Jews.

Judaism walked a painful course for 4,000 years. Father said that the people who received the most persecution were the Jews. It was because all nations around them practiced Polytheism. Jews who believed that there is only one God received an unimaginable amount of persecution that it would've been impossible for others to endure. The suffering they had to endure through for 4,000 years in order to be chosen by God cannot be described with words.

So Jesus came upon such a foundation, but because of the failure of the Jewish people to believe and serve Jesus and instead murdering him, those who believed in Jesus had to die in martyrdom. That is the 2,000 year period. So 4,000 years combined with 2,000 years make up the 6,000 year period. God's providence could have advanced and Father could have come as the third son because of the foundation of 6,000 years of the suffering of his two elder brothers.

However, these two brothers opposed Father. Jews think that their crucifixion of Jesus was right. Father however says that Jews have murdered Jesus out of lack of belief. Jews don't want to hear that. They become angry whenever they hear it. That is why the Jews in America are the ones who persecute Father the most. Also, what about Christianity? Christians say that they received complete salvation through the cross but Father says otherwise. So Christians oppose Father.

When he was working in America, Father said "I have three enemies in America. Two are my brothers Judaism and Christianity. The other is Communism. These three enemies try to kill me." However, his two brothers sent him to Danbury prison before Communism could lay its hands on Father.

Father however still tried to save his two elder brothers. It is because Communism is

143

after Judaism and Christianity. Communism is set out to decimate conservative sides. Father offered a lot of *jeongseong* in order to save his two elder brothers from the hands of Communism and invested a lot of money in founding a newspaper called The

Washington Times. He did this in order to fight the battle against Communism, who were bent on chasing his two elder brothers away.

Father said that he thinks about Joseph whenever his two elder brothers try to kill him. These two elder brothers are the ones who served and attended God for the past 6,000 years before Father was born on this Earth. Father said that this is the reason he must save his two elder brothers even though they tried to kill him.

Even now, Father does not hate Jews and Christians but thinks that they are two precious elder brothers. Father said that as all three brothers are in America, heaven's Will must be accomplished in America.

Father made a determination before he went to Danbury prison: ' I must not die here. If I die here, it will be same as the crucifixion of Jesus.' Jesus was not able to fulfill his mission because of the crucifixion.

There were 200 prisoners in Danbury prison at the time. They at first ignored Father, calling him the head of a heretic group branched out from Christianity. Also, they gave Father the light task of taking care of salt and pepper shakers in the cafeteria because he is old. Father however came out in the morning before anyone else to sweep the floor, wipe the tables and make all the necessary preparations for a meal.

The prisoners in the prison did not want to work hard. However, Father cleaned after himself very neatly when he was done eating, and anyone who saw Father's sincerity was moved. Father became the role model of others in this way.

Father slept from midnight to three in the morning. He then woke up and kept praying in the prayer room. Some of the inmates plead to Father that they want to pray with Father in the prayer room. Father, however, politely turned down their pleas because they wouldn't even understand his prayers since he prayed in Korean.

A few weeks later, they began to respect Father, calling him "Father Moon!" Then whenever their family members came to visit them, they said "I am together with this great man called Rev. Moon. It is an honor to be in this prison with Rev. Moon."

Those who were released from prison before Father came to Father and said "I am sorry that I'm leaving here before you. I will make sure I visit you later." Father completely changed the environment like that. So there was no one who would hurt Father. However, there were still worries in Father's heart.

Mr. Kamiyama went to Danbury prison together with Father. Father received eighteen months and he was sentenced for six months. Their sentences were reduced for good

behavior however. Father spent thirteen months and Mr. Kamiyama spent four months in the prison.

When Mr. Kamiyama was with Father, Mr. Kamiyama took the night watch while Father slept. As his release date was drawing near, Mr. Kamiyama worried who would stand the night watch after he was released. He worried if Father would sit alone and eat in a corner of the cafeteria.

However, God moved the hearts of one white person and one black person to allow Father at least three hours of sleep. They came to Father and pleaded, "Rev. Moon! We will take turns in standing the night watch so sleep soundly." Father told us "That's how I was able to sleep at least three hours a day without worries." After all this, Father was able to make it out alive.

What did Father do after being released from the prison? Father said "My elder brothers tried to kill me but I advanced the amazing providence of saving my brothers. Through this, I restored the elder-ship." Through loving his two elder brothers, Father who was in the third son's position was able to take the position of the eldest son.

144

Father then started asking us everyday, "What did I tell you that I did inside?" "Yes. You said you 'restored the elder-ship.'!" Then he asked again the next day, "What did I do?" "Yes. You 'restored the elder-ship.'" We used to say that like we say about God's Kingship these days. When we give three cheers of Eog-mansei, we shout "Eog-mansei for the establishment of God's kingship!" Back then, it used to be the restoration of elder-ship. So we repeated everyday, for weeks and months, "It's the restoration of elder-ship. The restoration of elder-ship."

Father also told us "Do you know the meaning of restoration of elder-ship. Restoration of elder-ship means that the younger son has now taken the position of the eldest son. The spirit world now cooperates with me. Only the eldest son can achieve God's Will." Father came out of Danbury prison victoriously without avoiding the persecution.

The two elder brothers sent Father to prison but many righteous people among the sides of these brothers came to Father. They came to Father and said "We are sorry. The people of America have put you into prison for something so trivial."

The incredible miracle of white people repenting happened because Father went to Danbury prison.

Father also gave special Words below while he was in Danbury prison about Mother who offered *jeongseong* for him.

"The Teacher is truly grateful for Mother. I believe Mother has experienced the deepest depth of the valley of *shimjeong* with this situation involving Danbury. She met me while she was just a child and she's been ascending rapidly. Because of her life, her standard has been increasing gradually. She was able to know the heart of a woman who yearns for her husband." (From *True Parents' Life Course*)

145

1988 Olympic Games and the proclamation of The Foundation Day For The Nation of the Unified World

After the 40 years extension of the providence from 1948, the 1988 Olympic Games were held in Seoul.

From external point of view, the 1988 Seoul Olympics helped show to the world the strength of Korea as a nation. From an internal point of view, God's providence was embedded within the olympics. The government was officially established in Korea in 1948, but after 40 years of extension in the providence, Father proclaimed 'The Nation of the Unified World' and brought the level of Korea to the level of the nation that unified the world(This level has now been extended to that of The Nation of the Unified Cosmos).

Athletes participated from 160 nations, the largest number in the history of the Games. There were 13,000 participants and there were even 514 participants from Soviet Union. It was something we could only dream about at the time.

When I was in New York, a member who used to work as a teller at a branch of a Japanese bank told me that many Japanese people in America sent money for the successful event. Our country was short on budget, too, but many people around the world sent money to Korea.

In Osaka, Japan, there was a meeting hall for Koreans who lived in Japan. They made and put up a plaque on a side of the walls and there was a list of who gave 1 Million Yen, 2 Million Yen, and 3 Million Yen. Koreans in Japan donated a lot of money at the time. Our government put those money into good use.

160 nations participated in the olympic but many of them were small island nations with few tens of thousands of population. Such nations could not send their participants. So we invited these participants and paid for their cost. You see, they

could be counted as one nation as long as they have at least three participants including the flag-bearer. A large nation such as America would be counted as one nation and small nations with only three participants could also be calculated as one nation. It is said that Korea invited these small nations' participants with the money they received as donation from their people living abroad.

North Korea was watching attentively as how well South Korea would host the '88 Olympics. So we had to put up a good show. We also had to show to the world our true self. So Korea invited even the smallest nations and the number of participating countries became 160. The most number of nations in history participated in this olympics.

Father invited the participants and their staff members who came for the '88 Olympics to Little Angels Art Hall. Father gave them good food, showed them Little Angels' performance. He gave suits to the men and silk clothing to the women. Father also gave ties and scarves. Father's close assistants, Mr. Park Bo Hi and Rev. Kwak Chung Hwan, welcomed these participants, and they were greatly moved when they introduced to them about Father's worldwide providence.

The participants from Soviet Union did not come at first. The festival continued for three days and the participants from Soviet Union ended up coming for the event on the last day after hearing so many good stories from the participants from satellite nations. On this day, Father's assistants, who were there to act as Father's representative, worked hard to explain about Father's providence. They told them that "Rev. Moon does not have enemies. He hates none. He is also working very hard to save this world. He also has done a lot of works through unending services and sacrifices."

The participants were greatly moved and one of the participants who won a gold medal offered his newly-won medal to Father through the head of the team. He said that

146

they received so much from Rev. Moon and they couldn't leave the nation without returning something to Father.

Rev. Kwak at the time came to Father's house in Hannam Dong and reported this. Father was very happy. Father was satisfied and said "OK. As the children of the enemy nations come to me bearing substantial gifts, the path will now open."

Then Father said that in the Seoul Olympics, Father represented Jacob and the second generation children represented Esau. Even though they came to Korea to participate in a tournament, from Father's providential point of view, these second generation Esaus

became one with Father who was in the position of Jacob. Father said that the important event of the unification of Esau and Jacob happened through the '88 Olympics. So Father made sure he watched as many sporting events as possible during the '88 Olympics. Father turned on three televisions in order to catch all of the events.

Seoul did not have enough stadiums so the olympics used stadiums in other cities such as Busan, Daegu, Gwangju, and Jeonju. Most of the games were shown on TV and Father watched them without sleeping. Father watched the games until 2 or 3 in the morning. Father watched the games until 3 in the morning, trying to stay awake but dozing off from time to time.

So those who were attending Father wanted to make Father go to bed, and even though the TV was showing the sports events 24 hours a day, they told Father "Father! It's over now." Then Father said "Yeah? Is it over?" Then he retired. Father however slept only about two hours and said he wants to watch the games again.

Father paid that much attention to the '88 Olympics. No one was able to follow the level of Father's devotion. Father said he had to offer the most amount of *jeongseong*; more than anyone in the world since the '88 Olympics had a providential significance.

Korean players won more medals than any other sports in wrestling during the '88 Olympics. Do you know what Father said about wrestling?

Father gleefully explained, "Western players have broad shoulders and they lack endurance because their buttocks are not as wide. They try to bring down Korean players like gorillas but it doesn't work so well. Koreans are small in height but their buttocks are big. They refuse to go down and they suck all the strength out of foreign players. Then they bring the chests to their opponents who are exhausted and take them down."

We realized Mother's power during those times. When Father was watching a game at its final round, when the color of medal is about to be determined in 2 to 3 minutes, Father began clapping and called Mother to come in a loud voice. Mother was of course watching the game in her own room with other attendants but Father still called her out. Then he said "Mother has to be next to me."

Father kept insisting on Mother to come out so Mother hastily went to Father's side. She cheered and clapped together with Father. That must have given him a lot of spiritual strength. Even Mother would be sleepy or previously preoccupied with something else, Father said the heavenly fortune comes to work when Mother is next to him. Father says that Mother needed to be here for victory.

Truly, our losing player would reverse the situation and win in the end when Mother came. I truly realized the power Mother had at the time.

Many missionaries who were working abroad came back to Korea upon Father's command. Each nation's church leaders and core members from about 20 nations came to Korea with their Korean missionaries. So those national leaders and the core members gave truck loads of McCols to the players from their own nation for free. I thought at the time if Ilhwa's McCol was invented just for that time alone.

Olympics games would be held late in the summer night, so those McCols and water bottles must have been very refreshing for the players. Our church members even gave them free interpretation service.

147

Those participants from each nation did not even know that their nation had The Unification Church. There could have been participants who even hated The Unification Church but they could not help but to fall in love with Unification Church at the time. They were just glad to see their own countrymen but seeing them sacrificing themselves so much for them, they were very grateful for our church.

Our church gained a lot both internally and externally through the '88 Olympic events. It a chance for us to let others know about ourselves on the external level. In addition, by proclaiming 'The Nation of Unified World' after making sisterhood relationship with many different national leaders around the world. we accomplished the things we had not fulfilled during the previous 40 years

Father told us that the '88 Olympic events has an important providential meaning that would decide the fate of Korea. Father said this was the reason he had to watch all the games while offering more *jeongseong* than anyone else in the world, and said that the heavenly fortune will now be with Korea.

148

The realm of parenthood was restored in 1992 by establishing Mother

It was 1992, when the 40 years extension from 1952 ended.

Father put forth Mother in front of the whole world in this year. Father had to accomplish an important task before being able to put Mother in front of the world. It was regarding Communism. So Father met Mikhail Gorbachev in 1990 and Kim Il Sung in 1991. These meetings did not take place by coincidence.

I talked about ' Panda Motors Co.' before. Father made a tremendous amount of investment in China, a communist country, an enemy country, and protected China's economy until the end. The Communist World watched this, and they were incredibly surprised by Father's ' Panda' providence. They thought ' Hey! Why did Rev. Moon, who opposes Communism, help China?'

Father at the time said that 5,000 KGB agents are working in America to collect information for their Russian intelligence agency. He said that these agents collected information about the activities of Father and reported them back to their government. After closely monitoring Father, they realized that Father's works were truly sacrificial works. They were moved by Father's genuine sacrifices and his works for the sake of his enemies.

Father asked to meet with Gorbachev after holding the World Press Assembly in Moscow and Gorbachev was willing to meet Father since he already knew about Father's sacrifice for his enemy country, China, through KGB.

When he was with Father, Gorbachev asked Father, "Rev. Moon, I' ve done my research about you and you are not our enemy. I have been successful with my policy but our economic foundation is still very weak. Please help us with Rev. Moon's worldwide organizations and economic power."

Father told Gorbachev, "It only be a temporal help if I helped you financially. If you truly want to make Russia a great nation, you must believe God. Creating a great nation cannot be done through only human mind. Give your people the freedom of religion." Gorbachev then guaranteed the freedom of religion in his nation.

Father also told Gorbachev, "Please guide Kim Il Sung. Please tell him that the unification will not come through physical violence but it needs to come through God's eternal truth and love and through service and sacrifice." Gorbachev upheld Father's request.

Father then made a suggestion: "You should allow me to educate your youth so I can train them to become the leaders who will usher in the eternal advancement and prosperity of your nation." Gorbachev entrusted Father with the education of a number of college students. Gorbachev followed Father's guidance.

At first, we looked for 200 students who could speak English well, and we realized that there were many college students in Soviet Union who could speak English very well. When I asked them how they were able to speak English well, they said that they had to studied hard because they had to know about the language and culture of their

enemy nation in order to beat them. So many students volunteered and the initial number of 200 became 4,000. They came to America in groups of 200 to study.

I was working as a preacher for CARP(College Association for the Research of Principle) while also working as a pastor at the time following Father's command. So I was able to participate in this education sessions about three times. The students from Soviet Union loved the things they were being taught and said "Christianity teaches that corpses will arise from their grave and that Jesus will return on clouds but we do not believe such things." They said that the Principle was much more scientific, logical, and practical, and it was easier to understand.

Joyful after principle lectures, they said "No problem! This is very true." I saw that

149

Atheists were absorbing the principle even faster than Christians who knew it all wrong. I was very much surprised.

One professor from Soviet Union said during his farewell party, "When we learned about communism, we were taught to hate, kill and wage bloody revolution, and we thought violent revolution was the best. However, after listening to Rev. Moon's Principle, we realized that the best thing to do is to sacrifice for others and love one another. You are very fortunate to be so young and be able to listen to Rev. Moon's teachings for long time. I feel very sorry myself as I do not have much time as you do with life." I witnessed these people shedding tears and rejoicing. Father brought Gorbachev into complete subjugation like this.

Father then met Kim Il Sung. Kil Il Sung also thought that Father was his enemy. However, after meeting Father, Kim Il Sung actually said "I thought of you as one of the strongest enemy I have. However, I was able to conclude that you are not my enemy after learning about your life. I've come to realize that you are truly a person who gives endlessly and sacrifice for the whole Earth. Therefore, I respect you." Then he also even added, "If we work for the unity of this nation, we can do it quickly. If the Korean government follows you, I also will follow you without condition."

Father was very happy when he came back from his meeting with Kim Il Sung. Father said happily "Kim Il Sung knew what he was talking about. He saw what kind of person I was so he was a smart person. If Kim Il Sung stands in front of his people and say ' People, listen! This is the True Parents. Let us all follow him!' then the whole country can be restored in one day!"

Communists are originally made of murders. So communists incessantly made attempts for True Parents' lives. However, Father was able to bring Mother to the stage when such Communists came to Father's embrace.

Then what kind of person is our True Mother? Father's life is important too but Father cannot be True Parents if Mother, God forbids, is murdered by communists. The humanity would then have no way to be saved. So Father always puts Mother in the back while advancing the providence. However, since communists, who were after Father's life, were brought to complete subjugation, Father was able to put Mother in the front.

Since the original humanity was devastated because of Eve's active role in seducing Adam to the fall, Mother, who came as the perfected Eve, has to walk in front of Father and help Father become successful, thereby restoring the wrong doings of Eve through indemnity. Father had a reason to put Mother in the front. So Father wrote a caligraphy that read

'Coming of the Global Age of Women' and opened the age of women with Mother.

How much *jeongseong* did Father offer until he was able to put Mother forth to the world?

In the World War Two, America, England, and France, formed God's side and the Satan's side was formed by Germany, Japan, and Italy. These six countries become seven when we add Korea. Father said the names of the three nations on God's side once when he woke up in the morning, once before each of his meals, and before he went to bed. He said them five times a day and he did this for forty years. How much does that come out to be? When we calculate, it becomes 73,000 times(40 years x 364 days x 5 times).

Father then said "The names of these nations are so attached to my mouth now that if I fall unconscious and regain my consciousness, I will automatically say the names of these nations. If I am to undergo an operation and wake up from the anesthesia, the first thing I will say will be these names." Father also said "I put so much *jeongseong* before I was able to put Mother forth."

During that time, Father said "Do you know what *jeongseong* is? *jeongseong* means repeating the same thing over and over again everyday like a fool, even if no result appears. That is *jeongseong*." Father said that he prays in advance for the things that will happen after 10 years, 100 years, 1,000 years, and 10,000 years.

When you pour water in a bowl, you can fill it up to the brim. If you continue to pour, the water will begin to spill. Father said “Even though your *jeongseong* would show no result, you must keep on praying until it reaches the breaking point.”

Father established The Women’s Federation for World Peace in 1992, and appointed Mother as its chairman. Then he advanced the providence of restoring the parentship through Mother’s mouth. Mother said “Rev. Moon has walked such and such life course to walk the path of Messiah, of True Parents” as she spearheaded assemblies to proclaim about True Parents in front of the world.

I want to introduce an excerpt from Mother’s speech.

“The mission of the Messiah, the Savior is to teach the way to end the history of sin which begun from the humanity’s loss of the path of True Parents, True Spouses, and True Children.

I hereby proclaim to the whole world through this occasion that Rev. Moon has pioneered the course of the Messiah True Parents throughout his entire life. As you must be well aware, Rev. Moon has pioneered the future for the humanity through discovering the original sin committed by the human ancestors, revealed the purpose of God’s creation even in middle of the world’s relentless attack and persecution. (From her 1992 speech)“

Mother told me back then “As someone who has watched the miserable life of Father, I felt like my heart was about to burst open when I proclaimed Father as the True Parents and the Messiah of humanity.” She also said “It was very difficult for me to contain my emotion, stopping myself from breaking in tears.”

Mother is the person who knows Father more than anyone else. Mother was able to restore the parentship through proclaiming Father as the Messiah and the True Parents of humanity. That is why Mother is an important person.

151

Providence to restore kingship began in 2000

On June 13, 1998, Father blessed four great saints and 30 murderers.

What kind of meaning does this blessing have? Through blessing the greatest of saints in the spirit world and also the murders in the bottom depths of hell, such as Stalin, at the time same, Father demolished the barrier between heaven and hell. Since the barrier

between heaven and hell was gone, Father could freely traverse not only heaven but also hell. Father said that he equalized heaven and hell.

Father said that God's sorrowful heart was relieved when he blessed the thirty murderers even more than when he blessed the four great saints. God's wish is to eliminate hell completely. Only when hell is eliminated and Satan's foothold is gone can Satan return to God. Father spoke these amazing Words while giving the blessing.

"There is no sin committed by humans that cannot be forgiven," he said.

Father says that he has the power to forgive any kind of sin. How wonderful is that? Whenever I heard things like that, I felt ' Ah, God and Messiah both are not set out to punish people's sins but find a way to forgive them by completely stripping them of Satan's accusation.' I felt that this is the love of True Parents.

Father says this sometimes: "What would be the parents' hearts when they see their children being dragged down to the guillotine? The parents will do anything in their power if it means they can save their child. Is it not the parents' heart? God is the same. God is the parent. Even though human beings are born of Satan's lineage, God wants to help human beings to escape God's lineage, escape God's accusation, forgive them, and welcome them back to His embrace as His sons and daughters."

Father has entered the state where he can now do anything if it is God's providence. Satan can never accuse Father anymore. That was March 21, 1999.

In Brazil, South America, there is a large river called the ' Pantanal.' Then there is a hotel called Americano. During his stay in that hotel, Father said often times that Satan came to him and said ' Father, I now have nothing to accuse with the works you do. Satan was brought to complete subjugation.

Then what was Father supposed to do after the year 2000? He had to restore kingship.

Father had to restore kingship now that he restored elder son-ship and parentship. Father told us that the completion of the restoration of these three things is Godism, Heavenly Father-ism.

This Godism and Heavenly Father-ism would have materialized naturally had Adam and Eve not fallen. Adam and Eve would have stood in the position of eldest son in front of God, and become parents once they had given birth to children, and then finally become king as they began to rule the world. Father said that that is the completion of Godism and Heavenly Father-ism.

As Adam and Eve fell and failed to fulfill their kingship, Father had to fulfill this in his lifetime. Then the kingship must be restored; but this is not restored just through words. A world where its people serve God on this Earth and where it is ruled by God's kingship must be established. We must serve True Parents who represent God, who does not have a form, as the king of all kings. Then we ourselves must become little kings. We ourselves must become little messiahs. Everyone must participate in this restoration of kingship.

So what did Father do in 2001? Father held The 'Coronation Ceremony for God's Kingship.' There is no word that can fully describe the importance of this event. When we

152

give a cheer of eog-mansei, the first cheer we give is 'Eog-mansei for the victorious establishment of God's kingship.'

What is the reason we say this? Before 'The Coronation Ceremony for God's Kingship,' God's authority on Earth was not of God's authority but of a ministry of education, a president, or a prime minister who represents the King. The fact that the victory of 'The Coronation Ceremony for God's Kingship' was established means that God was then able to rule the world directly.

As the coronation ceremony for God's kingship was held in 2001, Father said that he must fulfill God's Will on January 13, 2013, twelve years after the coronation ceremony. We must serve True Parents while we are alive until they fulfill God's Will. This is a truly precious opportunity and something for which to be thankful.

153

We can be proud of True Mother

Father said that those blessed members who received the blessing while Father was alive must tour the world. People around the world will come but they cannot get blessed directly by Father after he goes to the spirit world. Then these people will become envious of us and follow the ones who received their blessing while Father was on the Earth.

If all those who received their blessing directly from Father goes to the spirit world and only one blessed family is left and lives in a deserted island to hide from the world, people will line up there. Then they will incessantly ask to that family, "You received

the blessing from True Parents, right? What kind of people were True Parents? What did you learn from True Parents?"

Father also asked once, "Do you even realize how great it is that you received the blessing while I was alive?"

Father's final providence from 1945 to 2013 is advancing in the same stages as the entire Parallel Periods.

Father does not hold a view of life that is negative or pessimistic. Father does not become disappointed in any circumstance. Whatever may come his way, Father says, "Hey! There is hope in it. If I overcome this obstacle, there will be good things waiting for me!" He thinks in a positive way. Father was able to endure all the hardships because he had an optimistic view of life.

Father said that he looked into the central figures who took part in advancing the providence in the past and thought, ' How will I avoid making the same mistake? How will I prevent the sons and daughters of The Unification Church that I lead from repeating the same mistake?' Therefore, we can't help but to obey what Father says as we get to know Father's teachings. This is a path that you cannot walk if you try to know where you are going. Absolute Faith, Absolute Love, Absolute Obedience: what do they mean? They mean that we must walk this course in ignorance.

People did not know that the Fall of Adam and Eve happened in an instant. Father said that people will not be able to walk this course of restoration if they knew how and where they were going. Satan accuses if True Parents tell them. "Hey, even I would be able to do that if someone just told me." True Parents have to complete everything first and explain later. If they teach first, then Satan finds a condition to accuse. Therefore, we must follow Father no matter what even though we know it not the reason at the time.

I will mention something about Mother.

Our Mother is someone we can be very proud of. Mother was only seventeen years old when I first started to serve her and I was ten years older than her. Even then, I was never able to stand on top of her. I speak to her about ten things with my earthly knowledge. However, Mother says only one thing and I am left speechless. I realized that I could not dare to challenge her with physical age or the knowledges that I learned in the secular world.

Mother is very spiritual. Father thinks of it as very precious as well. Father too says that Mother has three good points.

First is that Mother is spiritually very precise and very bright. When Father would be stuck in indecisive moments, Mother would say to Father, "Father! Couldn't you do it like this?" Father then realizes, "Yes! You are right!" Father says that Mother speaks a few words, but they are very helpful.

The second good point is that Mother is very obedient. Mother is so obedient towards Father that she never even gives a hint that she doesn't want to follow Father's direction. That is the faith of Dae Mo Nim. Mother had a maternal uncle (Mr. Hong) who, together with his wife, raised Mother in the position of her father. Mr. Hong raised Mother from the time she was very young. When I asked him what Mother was like when she was

154

little, he told me two stories.

One of the stories was that Mother used to wear her school uniform so cleanly that

her white collar would not become dirty even after wearing the clothes for over a week. He said he was very curious as to how that was possible.

Looking at the way I cleaned the floor with a rag, Mother told me one day, "You tend to wipe the floor very cleanly too but when I clean floor with a rag, I do it until it is absolutely spotless. I will forgive you even if you are a bit shabby because now I don't do that myself!" Mother is such clean person.

Another story was that whenever Mother told Dae Mo Nim that she is sick somewhere or her mind is uneasy for some reason, Dae Mo Nim would say "Let's have a worship service." Then all the sudden they would have a service. Whether it be day or night, the two would sit down, sing songs, and pray. Then Mother's ailment would disappear magically. Dae Mo Nim raised Mother in such a way.

Following Father is also very difficult for Mother. How difficult is it? It's difficult beyond words.

Mother said on one occasion: Mother's body was very heavy after giving birth to Hyun Jin Nim. The first 40 days after giving birth is very difficult for women. Blood keeps seeping out from the womb until it retracts to its original position so women have to wear a sanitary pad. Mother's body was still swollen one week after giving birth to Hyun Jin Nim when Father told her to follow him in a tour. Mother said she hid in a

corner and cried. Her heart was breaking because her body would not move as she wanted.

I got goose bumps when I heard this. So I talked to Father about this when he came back home which led to a long conversation.

"Father knows all, but there is one thing you don't know," I said to Father. "What is it," he asked.

"How could you tell Mother to follow you on a tour while oblivious about the fact

that Mother's body was completely swollen after giving birth to Hyun Jin Nim?"

"Then should I tell Mother, Thank you, thank you, thank you for giving birth to my children?"

"Maybe not that much, but couldn't you understand her situation a little? Oh, there

is one thing I want to ask you. It is the woman who has to take care of the fetus in the womb for ten months but why does the baby have to receive the man's surname?"

"Hey! What are you talking about! Woman is a special storage place to whom the man entrust his seed and retrieve it after ten months. Also, the woman endures hardships over ten months but the man has to fight for his family for his entire life, putting his neck on the line! The baby is of the man's seed so of course it needs to follow the man's surname."

I was not able to say anything afterward. Anyway, Mother is of absolute obedience. Also, it is hard to imagine the amount of suffering Mother had go through.

Father sometimes tests the women who serve Mother to see how loyal they are. "Hey! What would you do if you were the Mother?" Father asks. Then I would say "If I became the Mother, I would not doze off."

Mother does not doze off even for a moment if she drinks some coffee. Then I nod my head up and down right beside her because I'm sleepy. Father talks while he is excited but it is difficult for Mother to sit still beside him. Someone told Father, "Wow, how could Mother sit still like that and not doze off? I don't think I will ever be able to do that as well as Mother" and Father smiled.

Anyway, Mother always takes the top place in endurance. When True Parents officiate a blessing ceremony, Mother has to raise her arm. She has to do it no matter what, even during or after her pregnancy. Father raises his right arm and Mother her left. I try to massage her arm muscle but her muscle becomes so tight that it would take a long time. Mother says she can't sleep because her bones would ache so much.

No matter how much suffering Mother goes through, Father never prays for her healing. Father said "I saved many people who were at the verge of death, but I can't pray for Mother." I did not understand it at first but Father said that Mother is in the center of all women. I was shocked when I heard Father speaking, "There are still many women who are undergoing a lot of suffering. Mother has to share such suffering with such daughters. That is why I cannot pray for her healing."

Father also said "I am making a request to Mother in advance. I tell her not to shed tears after I die because of physical attachment. When I die, people will no longer look to me but they will look to Mother. Our children, the members, and everyone around the world will look at Mother to see how she sends off her great husband. Then what kind of heart should she have when she cries at my departure? She should think, 'Oh, My husband is now leaving the earth. The great ideas of my husband have now ended on this earth. The ideas are left behind of course but the fire that was with the idea has now left this plain with my husband.' I tell her to cry for the ideas of her husband and not for the physical attachment. I hate that!"

I've heard this many times. Everytime I hear this, I think that the conjugal love between True Parents is according to the principle and seamless. Mother, however, follows such teaching so well. She soaks up the teachings as if a dry towel would soak up water, and I have felt that Mother truly is the prepared one.

The third is that Mother has a very deep heart.

Then what does it mean to have a deep heart? I asked Father one day "What is heart (*shimjeong*)?" Father thought for a moment and said "Internal love?" I thought in my mind, 'Does even love have internal and external love?'

External love means an expression of love and internal love means 'the root of love,' so to speak. It is therefore unseen. They have Water of Life in Cheongpyeong and no one knows where the water comes from. It is 'the source of love' as such. Mother has the heart that springs forth endlessly just as a spring water that surges endlessly.

Mother does not have a concept of possession. It will probably continue in the future but we see a lot of expensive gifts coming Mother's way, at which point she gives them all to others. This broach was also given by Mother. She said 'You need this, right?' and gave them to me. She later then gave me a ring and bought me a set of earrings that went together with the broach.

So Mother immediately begins to think "Who will need this? To who should I give this?" as soon as she receives something. She never possesses anything for herself.

There is something even more amazing. Father always felt bad about not being able to buy Mother a good ring when they were wedded in the Holy Marriage. So Father, in Netherlands, while they were at the second World Tour, took out all the money he had in his wallet and purchased a diamond ring that looked good. Mother however never wore it, and the conversation below ensued.

"Mother! How come you are not wearing the ring I gave you?" "Oh! I gave it to someone."

"Who did you give it to?"

"I forgot who I gave it to."

Mother forgot who she gave the ring to. Father felt a little sad but he was also grateful. Then Father said "Everything will come to Mother in the future and I am so grateful that she gives everything away with motherly heart. You must be such happy people to be able to serve such mother with deep heart!"

Mother is the kind of person who thinks, 'These do not belong to me. I must use them for the whole.' she gives all her clothes away. Then she tells Father that she has run out of clothes and says, "Father, but me a clothes." Mother has the heart of giving away her belongings like that.

Mother has such a very deep heart. We must be grateful that we are able to

156

serve a mother like that. We've thought that Father is a great person but Mother married Father when she was so young so she doesn't know anything. Father said that at first he felt that his patience was running thin with Mother after the Holy Marriage. Father said that he thought how could he be able to raise this person to greatness.

Father raised her like his daughter, took care of her like younger sister, sometimes followed her like an older sister, loved her like a lover, discussed things with her as wife, leaned onto her as mother, and watched out for her as grandmother. Father said he raised her through seven such stages.

Father said that he invested the love that Adam had to give to Eve, the love of original nature, so much as his bones might melt. Father said he is able to forgive others but he could not show mercy to Mother, because Mother had to stand at an equal position with him.

Father said that the most difficult thing was to educate Mother. So Father said "If I had known that the path of becoming the Messiah is for the perfect Adam to find the perfect Eve, and if I had known that it was such a difficult thing to do, I would have refused this Messianic responsibility." Father said that he accepted the task without such foreknowledge. Father had to raise Mother who was as a white sheet of paper from the position of a daughter. That is why Father treated her strictly. It was very difficult for Mother to endure such strictness as well.

Mother was able to surpass Father's expectation and became a great mother after such arduous training. Mother finished her responsibility just by giving birth to fourteen children. Moreover, Mother moved the heart of many people by following Father on multiple occasions of world tours.

We must be grateful that Heaven has bestowed us such a great mother and we must do everything we can from the position of Mother's representative.

A few members including myself rode in a mobile home in Boston with Mother at one time. There, Mother spoke about Dae Mo Nim.

After consumating her relationship with Mr. Han Seung Un, Dae Mo Nim became pregnant with a child and received a revelation from the spirit world that the heaven has bestowed upon us a Heavenly Son. However, when the baby was born, it was a daughter.

Dae Mo Nim always wondered, ' Why didn' t Heaven keep its promise?' Then a spiritually bright person visited her house when Mother was just able to walk around and said "Your daughter is a precious daughter who is worthy of more than ten sons. She will be a person of high status that she won' t have to taint her feet with dirt. She will be married when she is very young, and the man to be the husband will be much older than her. He will own everything that is on land, in the ocean, and in the air, and he will become the most prosperous man in the world. He will embrace the whole world and unify it."

So Mother said "Father always thinks about how he will make money and spend it for the Will."

Mother also spoke about the following. Shortly after giving birth to Mother, Dae Mo Nim saw in her dream the map of Korea and Japan. Japanese people, at the end of the second World War, took even eating utensils from Korean people to melt them and make weapons. However, in her dream, there were utensils in one region in Japan that were just piled up because Japan lost the war before even being able to use them. Then all of a sudden, these utensils and plates started to move, crossed the ocean, came back

to Korea, and came to form a pile in front of the house where newly-born Mother was sleeping. Speaking of this, Mother said "All the money in Japan belongs to me."

This means that Japan is the mother nation from the perspective of providence so all the wealth in Japan will come to True Parents through True Mother and be used for the providence of heaven.

157

Father's providence in America

I want to introduce to you a speech from 《True Parents' Life Course》 regarding Father's providence in America.

"America, which is the fruit of Christianity around the world, is the world-wide nation of Second Israel that will complete God's Will on the world level.

When the time of second advent comes, God will have to choose a Christian nation to become the Second Israel. As the idea of heaven on earth, which God tries to realize, is an idea that must be substantiated on earth, it must start from a focal point and gradually expand throughout the world. In other words, there must be a nation that can work as the model. That is why America is the nation which was predestined from long time ago to be chosen as the central nation in the End Days that can manage God's providence.

However, America is seeing an increase in many types of problems. Racial tensions between black and white people and drug problems are some examples. Also, there are other serious problems such as promiscuity of adolescents, breakage of families, and violent crimes. Out of all those problems, Communism which dubiously seeks its way into America is the most critical of all problems.

God will surely leave America which is currently harboring such an individualistic view of life and system of values, and America will fail to realize God's plan and wish. America is sick with diseases and I am here as a doctor, and America is on fire so I am here as a fire fighter."

This year (1996), Father called upon those who have been with the church for 33 years. The reason Father gathered devoted members around the world is because this was the twenty-first year since Father began his providence in America. Father said that he had gathered devote members around the world with more significance.

I think it was 1971 when Father took his first steps in America. From my point of view, Father started to pioneer in America from 1971 and 1992; it was the twenty-first anniversary. If we think that Father's pioneering work began substantially from 1975, then 1996 was the twenty-first anniversary.

This is when Father held big assemblies. I stayed in America for nine years, from 1983 to 1991. In hindsight, that is when Father started using the method of natural subjugation on Communism and Mikhail Gorbachev. Father went to America and met President Nixon. Why did Father meet President Richard Nixon? It was because President Nixon was a devout anti-communist.

Nixon at first wanted to continue on with the war in Vietnam. So the communists kept attacking Nixon with the Watergate incident in order to prevent Nixon from continuing the war. Such an incident should not have caused that much of scandal for a political figure such as Nixon but situation got out of hand because of communists.

Following the revelation he had received from God, Father overcame all obstacles to meet President Nixon and told him, "I will use my organizations and my followers and do everything to support you. Please trust me and do not come down from your presidential seat for the next six months." Nixon however did not know who Father was. President Nixon in the end failed to withstand the attacks of communists and stepped down from his seat.

Father made Ronald Reagan the president of America twice. Reagan was a former actor and he did not know much about politics. Then why did Father move heaven and hell to make Reagan the president? There was only one reason. It was to prevent the American troops from leaving Korea. Father said the American troops should never leave South Korea

158

until South Korea can become stronger than North Korea. North Korea even today strongly insists that American troops leave. It is because the American troops in Korea work as deterrence that prevent North Korean armies from invading the South.

Father said that it didn't matter who becomes president. Father was looking for a candidate who was an anti-communist and would never pull the troops out of Korea. That was Ronald Reagan. Reagan also was very close to Nixon. We mobilized all the power we had and summoned unimaginable power to make Reagan the president of U.S. twice. News World at the time played a great role in realizing this.

In Washington, there was a conservative newspaper called Washington Star that advocated the right-wings. However, Washington Star went out of business due to financial difficulties and The Washington Post was the only remaining newspaper left in Washington, the center of world politics. Washington Post is a liberal paper. They walk the course of liberalism and pro-communism. Father then made a determination to take the step and established Washington Times with hopes of surpassing Washington Post. So much money was spent on establishing this company. However, Gorbachev bowed his head low to Father thanks to The Washington Times.

Reagan said that he did not read any other paper during his 6 o' clock morning coffee time. Other papers would attack Reagan, therefore the only newspaper that could make its way into Reagan's bedroom was Washington Times. Washington Times subtly supported the works of Reagan. Whenever he saw the newspaper supporting his policies, Reagan became happy, took the paper with him in the bedroom, and read it there.

Reagan couldn't be always joyous, however. If Reagan does something even slightly wrong, Washington Times would criticize it and Reagan would say "Oh, no! Washington Times criticized me today!" Washington Times had such power to make Reagan laugh or cry.

Gorbachev finally came to America. The Washington Post welcomed him cheerfully. However, Gorbachev came to America with two wishes. One of them was to make a plea not to advance the Strategic Defence Initiative(SDI).

SDI is a type of nuclear umbrella. It is very difficult to defend the nation against nuclear missiles that could be launched from anywhere. In order to safely protect the nation, the nuclear missiles must be neutralized by melting them completely. SDI is the weapon that can do that. SDI is a weapon that can melt any type of nuclear weapons with strong laser beam.

It takes an enormous amount of money and technology to develop. The Soviets had neither. That is why Gorbachev wanted to plea to America not to make SDI. It was because The Soviet's nuclear missiles would become nothing more than toys as long as America has SDI.

Gorbachev's second wish was to give a 10-minute speech in the U.S. Capitol. He just wanted to say hello. Reagan was about to give his permission. The Washington Post was immensely happy about it and other small and larger newspapers argued that there was no reason to prevent the leader of communist world from giving a speech. However, Father told Dr. Bo Hi Park to tell them, ' Do not let Gorbachev speak in the Capitol no matter what. Tell Reagan never to give his permission.'

So Reagan found himself in a real tight situation. Reagan was about to show the nation's ability to embrace all, but Rev. Moon was against it. When Dr. Bo Hi Park came after reporting Father's opinion to Reagan, he said, "Father, Reagan says he is in a very difficult situation. It would be bad for him, since he is already half way to giving his permission. Should we still tell him to say no?" Father said "What are you talking about? Of course it's 'no.' "

Washington Times kept insisting that Reagan should decline the request. Reagan did not want to get on the bad side of Washington Times that practically made him the president twice. He walked around in his office room in agony, ' Oh, Washington Times! Rev. Moon

159

does not know the situation I am in!' Then he told his secretary, "Go ask him one more time. Does Washington Times really not want me to give the permission?" Father told him to never give Gorbachev such opportunity.

At the critical moment, Gorbachev asked "So what is it going to be?" and Reagan ended up saying "No." Then Gorbachev became furious. He was furious that he made so many years of preparation for this event but he was prevented from giving a speech because of Washington Times. He let his anger out on the Soviet Embassy in America, "You scoundrels, why did you now become friends with Washington Times?" He went back to his country unhappy.

Then one day, Washington Times received a call from the Soviet Embassy. The operator who took the call was a black woman with a sense of humor. When she picked up the phone, she pretended ignorance, "This isn't Washington Post," she said. You have the wrong number." Then the Soviet ambassador told her that he wanted to visit Washington Times. So Washington Times told him that he could come if he wants to.

So why did Father say no? Father came to know well about communism during his time in North Korea. Father also had a first-hand experience on the inside of communism during his three years in Heungnam Prison. So Father already knew that communists use only two tactics. One is deceit and the other is violence.

Communists use the tactic of deceit only when they are weaker than their opponent. They lie through their teeth. However, they no longer rely on lies when they become stronger than their enemies. They begin using violence. Father was well aware that communists are left with nothing but deceit and violence once their masks are taken off.

However, the leaders of the free world and American people did not know that. President Jimmy Carter especially did not know that. Carter used to be a peanut farmer in Georgia and he became the president with many votes from women. It is said that Carter was kind to women, washing the dishes or running their errands. That is why he became popular with women and won their votes. After such a person became the president, twenty nations became communist states. So Carter's method did not work.

Father's position was that we should never put forth communism. Gorbachev has a pretty face. American people are easily swayed by mood so they would be tricked by Gorbachev if he appeared on the TV and smiled. America people were oblivious about communism so if they started to think, 'Look at how the head of communism acts. Communism maybe is not that bad,' then Father's CAUSA (Confederation of the Associations for the Unification of the Societies of the Americas) could not operate in America. We opposed Gorbachev's public speech in America with everything we had and we won in the end.

Gorbachev worked his scheme many times after that, but his plans were thwarted because of us. Gorbachev was so cornered that he even cooperated with Kim Il Sung and the enemy of Japanese communists to blow up one of Father's houses called 'North Garden' in Boston. Their effort resulted in failure when one of our security guards found the place here they had cut the fence in a circle and camouflaged the cut by placing the cut portion against a rock.

Father's bedroom was so close to the breach that it could have been blown away with just one bomb. North Garden does not have a big front yard. There was also another time when a car filled with guns and explosives was caught by the FBI in New Jersey. The FBI searched the car that they found the address of Father's house.

There were many times Father avoided calamity thanks to Heaven. Gorbachev, who wanted Father dead so badly, lost his nerve when he realized that Rev. Moon was the one who was interfering with his plan.

In the end, Father met with Kim Il Sung and Gorbachev, the head of the communist world, and made a great advancement for the providence.

160

Father's miracles are substantial miracles

Father said he was able to find out through his research that Moses and Jesus relied too much on spiritual miracles.

Moses tried to lead the Israelites into Canaan by showing them miracles and wonders, but failed to fulfill God's providence when the Israelites disbelieved Moses and blamed him for their suffering.

Unable to contain his rage at seeing his people's unbelief, Moses committed a irreversible sin of 'striking the rock twice' and prevented not only the disbelieving Israelites but also himself from entering Canaan and die in wilderness. Only the second generation centering on Joshua and Caleb, who believed in God until the end, were able to enter Canaan.

Similarly, Father said that Jesus was put on the cross because he showed spiritual miracles. I watched a movie about Jesus a few years ago called 'King of Kings.' There, Jesus opened the eyes of a blind man and even brought a dead person back into life. The Jews and Pharisees who saw this became extremely jealous of Jesus. They thought 'We must kill him quickly. People's hearts are leaving us and they are leaning towards that guy.' They became very jealous of Jesus's able to perform miracles.

Father found out that Moses and Jesus relied too heavily on spiritual miracles and failed in the end, because they were accused by Satan.

There were many instances where Father easily brought a dying person back into life simply with a prayer. Father says that he can perform miracles just as well as Moses or Jesus but he doesn't. Spiritual miracles do not leave its trace. When people begin to disbelieve in such miracles, Satan will accuse and the miracles will not remain as Heaven's assets.

Father said that his miracles have to be substantial miracles. No one can deny their genuineness. It is like building a mountain on a plain. It takes time to create a mountain on a plain. We need lots of people, money, and we must invest everything. However, when the mountain is created, who can steal it? No one can deny its existence. Everyone passing by will be able to see it.

Isn't that the kind of miracle Father's been creating so far? The 160,000 couple Korean and Japanese sisterhood pact was one such amazing blessing ceremony that took place as an example. Blessing does not appear simply like a dream and then disappear. As blessings are given, those blessed couples have given birth to fine children.

Creating such miracles is Father's way. Father says that his uniqueness aspect is the spirit world. Father said "I must teach about the spirit world when I go to Soviet Union."

Many intellectuals came to our church in the early days, listened to the Words and the Principle, and received a lot of grace, but there were also many spiritual people who received revelations, spoke in tongues, and received the holy fire. That is why we were able to withstand the harsh persecution.

When we taught about the spirit world to college students from Soviet Union, they became very interested about the spirit world. It was something that they didn't know before. One professor even confessed that "When I see my grandmother in my dream, I feel happy, things work out for me, and unexpected good things happen to me in that day."

Father also said "The reason why people become interested about stories of the spirit world is that they are true and their original mind is attracted to such stories."

Father told us to read from 'The Message from spirit world'sent by Lee Sang Hun

161

after he ascended to the spirit world whenever there is a church event or a gathering of some sort. Thinking that we normally don't have enough time to go through the schedule and that not many people will be able to accept it easily, I asked Father "Father, do we must read from that message from the spirit world?" Father said "Yes, because it is right. The original mind feels that way. Even though we may not be able to accept it right away, that message will remain in their heart."

The spirit world is an eternal world. It is a world of mind with relation to the Physical World and it stands in the position of subject partner. It is a world that cannot be touched with the commonsense or theories of human beings.

When educating pastors in America, I read them from the "Message from spirit world" as Father had instructed. American pastors became saddened at the fact that they couldn't understand the reality of the spirit world and they left the education center one by one. However, those pastors who weren't able to understand the Spirit Message, came to Dr. Yang Chang Shik later and said "Rev. Yang, we are constantly reminded of the "Message from spirit world" that you used to read to us. We want to know more." I heard Dr. Yang giving such a report to Father.

Father is a very spiritual person but also a very practical person at the same time. Father has both extremes on each side. It is because Father's heart can embrace infinitely. Isn't that why people from all backgrounds are empathizing with the Principle and coming to serve Father?

“True Family and I’

I will explain to you about Father’s Words, ‘ True Family and I.’

These are important Words from Father’s speeches which he gave in his 40 year course of realizing God’s Will.

The conclusion of these Words is that ‘ Eve and the archangel fell through false love, their mind and body were separated as a result, and this world became sinful.

Therefore, all problems can be solved only when we receive the blessing centering on God and True Parents’ True Love.’ Father reads this himself every day.

Father wrote these Words by himself. The original context was about 40 pages long but it was reduced to a smaller size. The conclusion in the end is that the contradictory love of Adam and Eve is the origin. This was the source that interfered with human history and the event that became the seed of all human suffering. We must know this clearly and be able to explain this to others.

On the page 7, it explains about ‘ The Essence of Conscience.’ As you have already learned from the Principle, the inner most nature that is even more fundamental than conscience is the Original Mind and Spirit Mind.

Father spoke while putting conscience in the highest position. He said "Conscience comes before God, before teachers, and even before Parents." So I asked Father, "I think the conscience spoken here is different from the conscience explained in the Principle. In the Principle, isn’ t conscience explained as susceptible to being persuaded by human policies and thoughts?"

Father quickly caught on and answered "Yes. Will the people of this world understand what original mind and spirit mind are? So we have to call them conscience!" Father gave us ‘ True Family and I’ while thinking about the Human Fall, the principle of restoration, and the principle of creation. When Father was talking about conscience here, he was talking about original mind and spirit mind in our terms.

If we look at the middle of page 8, we read that God is the root of conscience. The sixth line of this page talks about fulfilling all greed and desires. I asked Father about this line. “Father! Don’ t we normally consider greed to be a bad thing?” Father then answered “No, the greed we are talking about here is not the bad kind of greed. It is the desire within us that makes us want things!”

“Then what does the desire here mean?” I asked him again. Then Father said “It is the state of our mind that has gained what it wanted with relation to another person. In other words, the concept of desire comes with another person in mind.”

‘ Fulfilling greed’ sounds a bit strange. Don’ t people normally say that greed is ‘ harbored’ and desire is ‘ fulfilled?’ The distinction was unclear so I asked Father again, “Is greed, then, an internal thing and desire external?” Father said “Yes, that’s right.” In conclusion, greed refers to ‘ Human’s original nature of wanting things’ and desire refers to ‘ the state where our mind of wanting things has been fulfilled with relation to another person.’

Therefore, greed and desire is in the sungsang and hyungsang relationship. Since desire exists after greed, they are in the sungsang and hyungsang relationship. In conclusion, greed does not necessarily mean something bad.

163

Chapter 11

Leader and *Jeongseong*

Pastor in Son’s Position vs. Pastor in Servant’s Position

If you are going to work as a pastor, you must completely discard the sense of self.

Everyone in the ministerial position is like a fetus in its mother’s womb, devoid of freedom. When I see someone who becomes a regional head and becomes full of pride, it really worries me. That is not a position where one can become like that. Father gave me the title of ‘ the vice president’ of the church, ‘ the president’ or the WFWP, and the ‘ president’ of House of World Peace and Unification, but I know that these positions are not mine because that is what Father taught me.

These positions are Mother’s positions. Mother is the vice president and Father is the president. In other words, I am mere a representative of Father and Mother. Mother is the chairman of WFWP in reality, but the position of president exists because normal people cannot see the chairman. Therefore, that position of president also belongs to Mother. It feels very good when I begin to think that way.

So Father explains that there are two types of pastors or lecturers: those who are in the position of son and those who are in the position of servant.

First, a pastor who is in the position of a son does not become full of pride but is rather busy boasting about their father. They talk about the things that their Father said, explain about Father’s will, and just say father, father a lot. However, who does that

son resemble? He resembles his father. So he boasts about his father but his *shimjeong* and *jeonseong* that he devotes for his father are all destined to come back to him in the end. He boasts about his father and that father bequeathed everything to his son who devoted so much *jeongseong*.

However, a pastor or a lecturer who is in the position of a servant boasts about himself. He forgets about his father and only boast about himself, saying ‘ I did such and such.’

Then what kind of relationship is master and servant? The relationship between a master and a servant is that the servant gets paid to do the master’s works. The servant is the one who is being paid. Therefore, a servant does not have any right to inherit and the relationship between the two ends once the payment is made.

When he hears our lectures or what pastors do, Father can quickly see, ‘ Oh, this person has a potential for development. This person does his ministerial work with the heart of a son.’ When Father sees someone who reports in a manner that boasts about himself, Father becomes sad, saying that this person does not have much potential for greatness.

Therefore, if you ever find yourself in a ministerial position, do not go for the popularity strategy. Father says that ministers should not use such tactics to become too close to the members on the human level. Some ministers focus on becoming popular with the members by playing cards, playing chess, or going somewhere fun after Sunday services in the name of becoming close with members. However, you should never do such things. Loving your members is a good thing but you must not lean too much towards members on the human level. If such a minister gets appointed to another place, the members who were close to that minister will follow him. That should not happen.

Then what kind of standard should pastors have while they do their work? They should be able to hear from their members, ‘ Our pastor was a pastor who tried hard, night and day, to teach to us about God and True Parents.’ Then even when such pastor leave the

164

church and go somewhere else to work, the members will long remember the *shimjeong* for God and True Parents which that pastor invested into them. The members’ root of faith will spread down to the ground firmly.

However, members who were under a pastor, who was in the position of servant, does not have much of a root of faith. If a pastor, who only sought to become popular with members, leaves the church, then nothing remains for the remaining members.

Everything disappears with the pastor and there will be a big hole in the heart of each member. These members will miss their pastor for a while but their heart will completely disappear over time. They will then become complete strangers in the end.

On the other hand, a pastor who is in the position of a son does not boast about himself but only teaches about God and True Parents. Therefore, that pastor will forever remain in the hearts of his members along with God and True Parents.

What our pastors must do is boast about God and Father. You will one day become a head of a church, a regional head, or even the church president. When you come to take such a position, you must not reveal your own identity. If you think, eat, and do everything that you do in order to reveal God and True Parents, you will be able to become true pastors and pastors who are in the position of son.

Pastors must refrain from committing actions that are of arrogance, pride, greed, anger, and self-centeredness. Why do some churches fail to grow? It is because their leaders are self-centered. Self-centered mind sets are the problem.

Father says that he becomes inspired at times and sad at times when he listens to the reports of church regional heads. Father's heart is moved and inspired when he hears reports like ' We were able to bring results thanks to True Parents.' Father says that he feels that those who yield the glory to God and True Parents have infinite potential for growth.

However, there are some who those who report in a way, ' I did such and such things well.' Father says that he becomes saddened when he hears reports from these types of people. Father then thinks ' You will not be able to develop more.'

When we do ministerial work, how is the success and failure determined? It is determined by whether you reveal God and True Parents or you reveal yourself. Therefore, in order for you to become successful in your ministerial work, you must not reveal yourself. Father is that kind of person.

165

The path that pastors must walk

If you are to become pastors and become the pastors who are God's sons, you must always have in your mind the questions: ' What will God think of this? What will True Parents think of this?'

When you cannot serve Parents personally, you must endlessly pray and study Parents' Words. Also, you must do exactly as Father has told us to do, feel the *shimjeong* of God, and become spiritually brighter. No one can attain such states without doing so.

The Bible tells us that to love the Lord is to follow the words of the Lord. It means to obey the word of the Lord. Father said this very frequently. That is why there is joy in ministry.

You may not feel like you have what it takes to become a pastor, but if you stay

aligned with Heaven, the environment in which you find yourself will infinitely raise you. You should understand that the very fact that you are working as a pastor, and not working in the outside world, puts you in a very holy position. Please think what a blessing it is for us, as pastors, to wait through the week to see the members on Sunday, worry about what we will say to them when we see them, and what kind of sermon we will give.

In my life-long course of following the Will, I've experienced many types of persecution, including being expelled from my school and being ridiculed by others who called me 'crazy.' However, I told myself that my efforts of giving people Words and offering them salvation is more rewarding than any other occupation in the world. I regard this work as the happiest of all.

Female members of our church who gave birth told me that the second generation children born into blessed families are not confident about becoming pastors and doing ministerial work. They asked me how they could make their children become more confident about walking the pastoral path. I told them that the pastor's course is not long. It is like rice seedlings that only need to grow a short while before they are transplanted into the rice paddy.

As we all know, Washington Times is our newspaper company. Washington Times once held a photography competition and one of our members took the first prize. Do you want to know what that picture was? It was a picture of an old hunched-back Priest walking in a chapel holding a lamp. We proudly presented the first-prize picture to Father. However, Father said "For someone to work as a minister until his back becomes hunched like that is a cruel thing. Pastors must have the kingship as well."

The priests in the Old Testament poured oil kings to anoint them. The position of priests was very high back then. They would receive God's voice and convey it to the kings. Therefore, how high should the position of a pastor increase? They should attain higher positions than kings. They must be the king of all kings.

Isn't this Father's position? Pastors must be able to control kings and nations. Therefore, pastors must attain the highest level of character and *shimjeong*. How could they have the right of king and be able to control nations without first becoming like True Father and True mother?

Walking the course of becoming pastors therefore is the highest level a path one could walk on as a human beings. People's live 80 to 100 years which is really nothing. I will become 64 this year and I feel my life has just zipped through time. This is why we must not set a goal that will end with our physical lives. We must look to our eternal life. The spirit world, which we will enter after our death, is a place of infinity. We cannot die nor run away.

166

If we are to be able to hold our head up high in the spirit world and be in a more glorious position, we have to make adequate preparation on Earth. I heard that Father also asked Mother to raise their fourteen children as pastors. He said that there is nothing more rewarding than the work of guiding the people of the satanic world to become the people of Heaven.

Father told us that the state of our physical bodies will be determined by how healthy we were inside of our mother's wombs as fetuses. When we see a baby weak or unhealthy, it is because their health was bad when they were in their mother's womb. We say that the state of health of a fetus determines the fetus's next 100 years of life on earth.

Then what is this earth? Father said that we live inside of a bag of water when we were just fetuses. Then he said that this earth, where we live with our physical bodies, is the bag of air. We take whatever we made on this earth for about hundred years and go to the spirit world, which is a world of eternity. When we realize that our lives on earth are the preparation for the eternal world that we are set to enter, will we be able to loosen up and let things slip? We will not be able to live our life so lightly.

Then what is the most non-damaging kind of life? It is the path that Father walked, the course of ministry. Even if you were to walk the course of ministry, you would not work as a minister for your entire life. There is a second generation child who happens to be spiritually very bright, and he said that "Pastors will work as politicians in the future." Pastors must jump in the field of politics. Pastors must become congressmen and even presidents.

The pastors that we have seen so far looked very miserable because they had to walk the course of indemnity. There is a sacrifice for each age in the history of the

providence. The reason the blessed families in 1991 had to return to their homeland was that there was a historic indemnity that they had to be made. Father was in great pain whenever he heard that many of the members were experiencing hardships because of it.

What did Father say at that time? "I don't have the luxury of worrying about a hundred or two hundred of members going financially broke. I have the responsibility of finding tribal messiahs, of restoring nations and the world. As such is the case, I do not have the luxury of worrying about sacrificing the family members that I love. If they follow me, they will never die. Great people will come out of their descendants and there will be sons- and daughter-in-law who will join my own descendants one day in marriage." Father blessed them in this way.

I was in America when the order to return to our own homeland was given. How did I feel at the moment? I felt, ' Father is searching for the loyal subjects, good sons and daughters, and faithful husbands and wives who can represent this age.'so those who complained, flunked but those who held back their complaints and returned to their homelands were ' Grade A'students. We would never be able to tell the difference between people if we put them in the same place. But if we shake the environment a little, empty seeds will be flung away but the good seeds will remain. This is why Father shakes us as hard as he can whenever the providence is about to embark on a new beginning and separate the bad seeds from the good ones.

There may be among you who serve your parents who have gone back to their homeland and experienced a lot of hardship, but if your parents can endure the suffering, then great people of heaven will be born in your bloodline. Therefore, please do not criticize or complain about the things that Father does. If we want to know, we must pray to God and find the answer ourselves.

How great could it have been if Noah's second son Ham did not influence his brothers when he became ashamed of his Father's naked body? His influence on his brothers led to his fall. If we are unaware about something, God gives the answer to our question if we keep asking him even to the point of resembling a fool, ' Father! I do not know this. Please teach me so that I may know.' Also, we must pray as if we are having a conversation

167

with God instead of just praying like a monologue. Who is the owner of our prayers? It's God. The one who listens to our prayers most seriously is God, our parent. If we keep

praying sincerely, the level of our *jeongseong* reaches a certain point. That's when God will certainly answer our questions. Therefore, we must wait while believing that God listens to our prayers. It is important to believe and wait.

If we ask a question to someone, we don't get a complete answer. Therefore, we must find our answer in the Words, and find the answer in the midst of our secretive prayers with God. It is very important to keep asking twenty four hours a day, ' God, what do you think about this? Parents, what do you think about this? This is what the Words say.'

We should always pray as if we are speaking to an actual living person. Don't just pray in one direction and conclude, ' Aju!' Also, we couldn't pray all night long even if we wanted, could we? I have many good experiences about this so I know this well.

"Father, I have so many questions that I am unable to understand, I must solve this problem, so please come to me in my dream and give me an answer or at least give me your response through inspiration."

Then I certainly have special dreams. If I don't dream, then sometimes my mouth moves automatically when I wake up. If I listen to my self speak, I come to realize that I am not speaking out of my own conscious but I am speaking the answer to the question that I asked a day earlier. I find the answer sometimes suddenly in the words of members, sometimes even from passers-by. Though most of them come through inspiration. It's really fun to have those kind of experiences.

I had a mink coat when I was in New York. Mother gave this to me. The coat even had Mother's name. I was serving Mother when Father went to Danbury and Mother gave me a ring and a few suits and also a mink coat during that time. I don't wear the mink coat as much now because I want to preserve it.

It was a cold winter day but the heating system of New Yorker Hotel, which I was in at the time, was so good that I did not know how cold it was outside. That may have been the reason but God kept giving me a direction to "wear the mink coat because it's cold outside." So I kept mumbling under my breath, "I don't want to!"

It was on the day when Father was going to cut the tape for this new extended building of our newspaper company. Korean pastors were getting ready to go to the occasion. I did not wear the mink coat because I felt as if someone would steal it if I hung it somewhere. There are many thieves in America. So even though my heart was strongly urging to me to wear the mink coat, I refused and wore something else.

The wind was blowing so hard that I stepped outside the building but had to come back in as soon as possible and go to my room on the 31st floor to put on the mink coat. Then the Korean pastors were complaining that they were going to be late because of me. They told me to get in the car quickly and shoved me inside the car like a crate. When we arrived at the place where the event was happening, it was freezing cold but no one was able to actually enter inside. Everyone was standing at the front of the building. We had to wait until Parents arrived and could only go in after Parents cut the tape. I almost froze to death.

Only then I began to pray, ' Oh! I' ve put myself into this ordeal because I didn' t listen to Heavenly Father' s command to wear the mink coat. I' m so sorry.' It became so unbearably cold that I had to ask the security if there was anywhere I could go to avoid the wind. He pointed me to the back door. So I snuck inside the back door like a rat and fled from the wind for a moment. I quickly went back to where I was only when I received a news that Father was coming. Just like this, Father teaches us everything from what to wear to what to eat only if we open our antenna.

I want to tell you an interesting story about Ilhwa' s ginseng extract. One member who works as an oriental medicine doctor told me about Ilhwa' s ginseng extract. I consumed the extract for a long period because I had constant constipation, yet I followed the doctor' s

168

order and quit drinking it about a year ago.

I had hemorrhoids but I never saw blood. When I quit drinking the ginseng extract,

however, I would see blood in the toilet when I was done with my business. That never happened before but it was becoming a constant occurrence, at least two to three times a week. I couldn' t tell anyone about this. Isn' t it embarrassing to tell someone about things like that in America? I was embarrassed about showing my ailment to a doctor, I didn' t have any medical insurance, I didn' t have any money, and I felt it would be very difficult for me to explain my condition to a doctor in English. So I couldn' t go to a hospital. Of course I could' ve taken someone with me to translate but I didn' t go nonetheless.

A month, two, then three months had passed but the bleeding would continue and I would see blood two to three times a week. Maybe I lost a lot of raw nutrients with the blood but I felt devoid of energy and very poor in general. I asked about this symptom to a person I know and I was told that this may be a beginning symptom of intestinal cancer. This person told me that intestinal cancer, colon cancer, and hemorrhoids

cancer would first show the symptom of bleeding. I became uneasy but I only prayed because I still didn't want to go see a doctor.

“Father! I've never seen blood until now but why I do I continue to see this?”

I only prayed like this continuously. Then one day, I received an inspiration that told me, ‘Hey, Gil Ja! You never bled when you were drinking Ilhwa's extract, right?’

When I thought about it, it was true. I would still have irritations because of the hemorrhoids but I never bled. So I mumbled like a crazy person: “You are right, Father! Someone told me that the ginseng extract is not for me so I haven't had it for over a year now.” I mumbled to myself like this. I started drinking Ilhwa's ginseng extract and I never had another similar instance since then.

Ilhwa's ginseng extract is a very good medicine. A mother among our 36-couple members experienced something similar. Mothers normally think that they have to feed their babies the *yong* at least three times. *Yong* is a medicine that creates blood and parents feel that not being able to feed *yong* to their children three times means that they haven't fulfilled their duty as parents. However, this *yong* is very expensive. It became very inexpensive these days but its price used to be very steep. She had three children but she just didn't have enough money to feed *yong* to her three children. She was greatly worried.

Then Father appeared in her dream one day and told her ‘Why do you worry? Just do these two things. First, offer a *kyeongbae* at 5 o'clock in the morning every day. Be very strict about the time and make all of your children participate too. Then Heaven will protect you spiritually. Also, make them drink ginseng extract. They will be protected from all diseases.’

The time when we offer *kyeongbae* on the first day of each month and at 5 o'clock on Sunday is the time we can become closest to God, so we should let our children participate in the *kyeongbae* session even if they cry.

This is something that happened during the engagement ceremony for the second generation 36 couples. I was serving Parents at the time and Father asked two things.

“Did your parents ever complain about The Unification Church? If so, you do not have the right to be here. Secondly, did you participate in the 5 in the morning *kyeongbae* session without fail? If not, then you do not have the right to be here.”

We must therefore dutifully observe the *kyeongbae* session strictly and guide our children to do the same. Father tells us to guide our children to participate in *kyeongbae*

as soon as they begin to walk. Mother is so strict about this that she keeps the tradition of making her grandchildren participate in the *kyeongbae* sessions even if they can't walk. Mother would make the parents cover them in blankets and bring the children to the sessions.

As we can see from this, God has already prepared ways for us blessed families to lead a healthy life style but Satan invades us spiritually and we suffer physically from diseases

169

because we do not observe these ways. Father therefore said "Blessed families will never starve to death if they just follow what Father tells them to do. It is because Heaven will protect them."

We should also tell other members to have the picture of True Parents inside their houses and hang the Tongil flag on their house. When we look at the page 237~238 of the 9th volume of <<True Parents' Life Course>>, these Words are below.

"Pictures of True Parents symbolizes True Parents. So if you put a picture of True Parents inside your house, your ancestors come and offer a *kyeongbae* at 3 o'clock in the morning. The realm of angels will serve. They live together with their descendants who are on earth. The condition of *shimjeong* centering on True Parents has been established so now the ancestors in the spirit world can come down and cooperate.

The Tongil flag represents Unification Church. It represents the physical Unification Church. It represents the individual also, but it also represents the couple. It represents our family but it also represents our tribe, and our nation as well. It furthermore represents The Unification Church and the entire humanity."

"Do you know why we hang that? It's for your own fortunes. It is same as Moses telling his people to smear their doors with blood to avoid the curse of death of the first-born son when they were about to escape to Egypt. Try and hang the flag in your house. We are now in the age where the Good Spirits can protect their descendants."
(Page 355 of the same book)

170

Leaders of Unification Church must be competent in both ministry and business

Father said that humanity will find no way to survive without Korean people now. Father tells Koreans to take the top position wherever they go. Does this not mean that

they should become the president or the king? Father told us that there will be no peace unless Korean people take the top position in every nation in the world. After traveling to many countries, I've come to feel that such a time will surely come very soon.

Korean people are generally kind. They also forget easily. They tend to easily forget even though they have done wrong. We've come to know that God also is actually very forgetful. God scorns human beings when they do wrong but God easily forgets when they repent and beg for forgiveness. If God were not forgetful, He could not have been able to act as God because he would be often.

Father said that this is the way in which parents would forgive their children even if they do wrong, but as children repent and beg for forgiveness later, the parents would no longer be angry and forgive them.

Korean people have a long history of being invaded many times by neighboring nations. It would be terrible if Korean people were not forgetful. You can't advance forward unless you let go of the past. God trained Korean people to forget the past, and they naturally developed that. Then Koreans came to know God's heart more than any people in the world.

Japanese people are generally vengeful and they are proud about taking revenge. Chinese people do not reveal what's in their heart. It's difficult to know whether they like it or hate it. I think such nature has been embedded in people because of their long history of internal conflicts between different clans. Once they begin to think something is bad, then they will not forget it easily and remember it for a long time.

Father knows about the kindness of Korean people and he wants the sons and daughters of Korea to act as pastors.

During my time as a pastor, I realized that this pastoral work is similar to farmers sowing rice seeds in their seed beds. When these rice seeds grow a bit, we relocate them, which is termed planting the rice. Pastoral work is like planting the rice. Your place of ministry is the homeland of resurrection. Our places of ministry become our homelands and we are dispersed to the fields that suit us the best. When the pastoral work is over, we go to academic field or financial field just as rice stalks are planted.

In our own world, pastors will become most successful in the future. Father said that Cain killed Abel out of embarrassment because God would accept only Abel's offerings and not his. When we look at our church, those who work in business organizations are the Cain.

Father said that he has to pay those who are in the business organizations as compensation for their work. This will allow them to sustain their livelihood and not complain. However, those who work as pastors are the Abel and the priest.

Everyone in the world will become Unification Church members when Father becomes victorious and when the Will is fulfilled. When such time comes, priests would be able to live well off only with their members' tithing. Father then made a promise that he will pay three times what the Cain people in the business organizations are being paid. Father will keep his promise.

Among the different tribes of Israelites, the Levites did not own any land but they lived well just with their tithing. The Levites were the priest tribe among the twelve tribes, were they not? If we nurture our inner-self and raise it high, the world will be filled with people and money. Such a time will come very soon. We must bite our tongue and endure until such a time comes. The course of the pastor is the right path for our life of faith.

171

Father however operates a lot of business organizations. He sent many members to these organizations. Father sends the members to these places and always worries. So he changes the personnel assignments constantly. Father puts pastors in such organizations' executives, and executives back to pastors.

Father wants us to experience both fields and develop capacity in both fields. We are trained so that when we meet new people, we quickly realize whether we should treat this person from the position of a pastor or from the position of a business man.

The former president of Seil Tour System, Mr. Kim Il Hwan is a very good example of this. He used to be a pastor. He was not a business man. However, Father appointed him as the president of Seil Tour System all of sudden. He must have been very surprised.

When he heard the news of his new appointment as the president of Seil Tour System, Mr. Kim contacted Father, "Father, why do you want to make me the president? I can't do it. Please let me just work as a pastor." He desperately pleaded. Father said "No. I was looking for the new president of Seil Tour System and your name kept appearing in my mind. That's why I have appointed you. Say no more." Father refused his plea. Mr. Kim now not only is a well-established business man who has been taking good care of the company but he also guides his employees in the path of faith.

Father allows people to experience both fields: pastoral and business. We must therefore excel in different areas. This is just as when Father made the determination to excel in both pastoral fields and economic fields when he first accepted the calling of God.

172

Father's Attitude in Offering *jeongseong*

Father escaped North Korea during the Korean War and went south to Busan. He went through much tribulation in Busan and later moved to Daegu.

Daegu is a city of great faith that was almost comparable to Pyongyang in North Korea. Father went to Daegu with a few of his disciples and lowered the anchor in Daegu to restore Christians. Many people received revelations and began to follow Father.

Father first converted Ms. Kang Hyeon Shil in Busan and sent her to Daegu in advance for pioneer activity. She was a Christian evangelist who graduated from Korea Theological Seminary. She went to Daegu and converted many elderly female Christians. I heard she received a lot of persecution because of that. Those elderly members' sons or sons-in-law were often times pastors or of high positions in their church. The elderly members received a lot of persecution because they were in such an environment.

Here is a story from that time. One of the elderly female members who diligently came to our church used to live in a second-story house. She was however locked up in the second floor of the house because her son and her daughter-in-law prevented her from visiting Father. They gave her a bucket to use as a toilet and sent food upstairs. Father kept visiting her, because he missed her. Father didn't make any promise to her that he would be outside the window whenever she looked out, but he sometimes hid in the corner of the street to get a glimpse of her when she looked out the window.

So when Father was arrested and dragged to the police station, the grandmothers would go together and cry a lot. This is when Father moved many times in one month. He sometimes moved almost twenty-three, twenty-four times a month, almost daily. When he searched for a place to move, he always picked a place with a backdoor in order to avoid the cops if they appear suddenly. The grandmothers would still follow Father even in such difficult environment so Father gave these Daegu grandmothers the title, 'My friends of suffering.'

Father then finally came to Seoul. Father came to Seoul for the reason of restoring the students who were attending Ehwa University and Yonsei University, both founded by Christians, and raise them as future leaders. Father came to Seoul with such great hope.

During the time when Mr. Eu Hyo Won was still alive, I often saw the grandmothers from Daegu coming to Seoul once or twice a year. Among them was Mrs. Bang who had a hunched back. Even these elderly grandmothers, many of them over 80, came to Seoul out of their longing for Father, however they needed much time to purchase the ticket to come to Seoul. It was because their sons and daughters-in-law would not give them money. They didn't want to give the grandmothers any money because they didn't want them to give the money away to The Unification Church.

In any case, the grandmothers would save bits of allowances in their skirt to purchase a train ticket to Seoul and buy a few bags of candy when they came. Our church was struggling so much at the time so even a few bags of candy were wonderful treats, but they were too humble to present to Father. The grandmothers would still give Father one bag of candy and they would also give a bag of candy to our house because my husband was the president of the church.

I was however oblivious about our church's struggle at the time. Father would be speaking to a few of us in the living room when we got a call that the Daegu grandmothers have just arrived at Seoul Station and they would be here in few minutes. Then Father is waiting in excitement. He would say "She's coming, right? Is she coming too? That person's

173

mother is also coming?" Father then tries to memorize the grandmothers' name before they arrive. Father did that because he longed to see them badly too.

Father would speak a few more things and then tell the young people to go to Seoul Station and escort the grandmothers back to the church. Father would sit still in the living room, waiting for the grandmothers to arrive. As soon as the grandmothers came, they would start crying inside the wooden floor room. Their hearts of longing for Father would burst open automatically. So their faces would become filled with tears and they would fall on the floor while offering *kyeongbae* to Father.

Father eagerly waited for the grandmothers to come but when they actually came and offered a *kyeongbae* in tears, he rotated himself so he was seated facing the side. He didn't respond to their *kyeongbaes* and his face became hardened. He didn't even acknowledge their arrival.

Father was thirty-six years old and the grandmothers were well over twice his age, so I felt I would welcome the grandmothers with glee, ' Oh, welcome, welcome!" if I were

Father.

Father would sit still for a while as the Daegu grandmothers would cry their hearts out. So I really couldn't understand that. It was very different from the normal way of greeting.

Father later explained about what he was doing back then. He said that his heart would fill with tears when the Daegu grandmothers came because he yearned to see them so much. This was because not only did he remember all the difficult times he had spent with these grandmothers, but also because he remembered how he relied on these grandmothers during the times he desperately attempted to save the city of Daegu.

However, the grandmothers from Daegu spent a lot of *jeongseong* in order to prepare for a whole year just to purchase the ticket to Seoul to come to the Headquarters Church in Cheongpa-dong, and Father was afraid of receiving their *kyeongbaes*. Father said that he normally received the *kyeongbae* of members and returned it to the Heaven, but at that time, he wanted God to receive the *kyeongbae* of His daughters directly. Father never explained about this when the Daegu grandmothers used to visit us so how could we have known about this?

I often saw Father who froze like rock while sitting on the floor with his head slightly turned to the side.

The church president in America dances out of joy when Father comes. When he reports to Father that the American church was able to reap a lot of results thanks to Father, Father would say "No matter how much results you were able to get, I still have the heart of repentance since we were not able to fully meet God's expectation." Then Father lowers his head and says "Praise God." instead of patting him on the back. Witnessing such scenes many times, I was able to realize how greatly Father loves God.

Father has come to this earth and made many results while enduring so much pain. Heaven is always with Father but he is still is a man of great humility who feels that he is much too inadequate to receive the greatest respect and trust and return it to Heaven.

Father even once said, "As you all are spiritual beings as well, you will not follow me if I receive all the love and glory." He also said "I will never stop loving God more than you do and be more united with God's *shimjeong*. This is the reason you feel, ' Oh! I can certainly be closer to God if I follow this teacher!' Your original mind is aware of

this. That is why you like me. You follow me because you feel that you can obtain eternal life through me and you can go to God through me. If I was a self-centered leader instead, you would become tired of me and stop following me.“

174

Chapter 12

The Principle and our Family

Mr. Eu Hyo Won Realized: “The Principle Is God’s Love”

We now live in the age where Father can talk about everything. It is because Father has created a world-wide foundation.

We give long lectures on Divine Principle but Father said that such long lectures will be unnecessary once all the people in the nation want to listen to the lectures without opposing. This is why Father ordered the creation of Divine Principle Hoondok Chart.

We must know what Father hates the most. Father says that we should not give lectures on the Principle by memorizing it in our head. It is because no one can completely memorize verbatim the entirety of The Divine Principle. Our own words will seep into the lectures we give where our memories fail. That is why Father told us to summarize the important parts in Divine Principle, make a chart out of it, and use it in place of black boards.

Father also does not want us to mix other words into the Principle. Please remember that what Father hates the most is speaking about different things other than the Principle. It is because such differences are bound to create sects. Father worries about this very much.

When we give Principle lectures from now on, we should read The Divine Principle first, and use the chart instead of black boards. We can put the chart included in the CD on the screen through a projector if we have one, and we can give lectures using a laser pointer. The charts include summaries of The Divine Principle so we can read the sentences and supplement them with various explanations. This is an entirely different level than the lectures given from memorization. Principle lectures become much easier when we use the chart. Father said that we should supplement these chart lectures with the contents of The Divine Principle or use excerpts from Father’s speech.

You must read Father’s speech books often. I’ve already emphasized this many times but you should read ‘ True Family and I ’, and Father and Mother’s Words. Also, we should stay away from talking about the things we invented while giving Principle lectures. Instead, we must use Father’s own Words.

Father's Words must be added to Principle lectures if our lectures are to be full of inspiration. Therefore, we can say that the Principle is the bone of the Words. All members must go to Christian churches and give Principle lectures in the future. Father mentions that it is a waste of money to continue building churches. Then he asks if we know why Christians muster money to construct large church buildings. He says that there is only one reason that those buildings are constructed; so that the Christians will one day invite us to their churches and have us give Principle lectures.

We can always count on there being a church when we hear that there will be a new apartment complex. It's really amazing. However, do they not all belong to God? As we now know Father's Words, we should not worry about the small sizes of our churches.

One day, Christians will tell us 'Abandon your small buildings and come to us to give us Principle lectures.' Christian churches are God's houses. Therefore, we must hone our lecture skill.

Christians still wait for the Lord, while praying 'Must we still wait for you, Lord?' Father said that they will one day get to know about Father and rally to Father, shouting 'O, Lord!' They have good knowledge of The Bible, pay tithing well, and actively participate in volunteer activities. How wonderful would it be if we taught them about the Principle and allowed them to give lectures as well? This is another reason why we members must become good at giving Principle lectures.

This is the same with North Korean people. They are very talented in promoting

175

their ideology. If they come to learn that our Principle is the truth, however, we could expect them to become talented lecturers. The students from Soviet Union before gave tearful Principle lectures in America. They gave the lectures in tears, saying that they had led unfaithful way of life because they didn't know anything about God.

If our members can't give good Principle lectures, or if they did not study Father's Words, then there is one thing they could do in the future. There will be a lot of garbage left after a large group of people come to receive the lectures so these members should at least clean after them.

The children of such members will accuse their parents. The children will lament that their parents sacrificed so much for the church, even at the cost of caring for their children, but they end up cleaning after the guests because they can't give Principle lectures. They will be greatly embarrassed.

Moreover, we will experience embarrassment as well when we go to the spirit world. Many spirits will come to us and demand, “You must have learned a lot from True Parents as you lived on Earth together with True Parents. Please give us Principle lectures.” Father says that we will be embarrassed if we are unable to give Principle lectures at that time. We will lose our foothold, be unable to stay in one place, and become wandering ghosts. The Blessing is a glory but we will suffer more from it if we do not fulfill our responsibility. Please prepare so that you do not regret in the future.

The Principle discovered by Father not only provides scientific evidences but also give very logical explanations. How about communism in comparison? Communism puts great importance in science as well but their theories are not logically supported. They also denounce the existence of God and heaven.

In my case as well, the persecution from communists who say that religion is the opium of people worked as my motivation to join the Unification Church. When I was a Christian, I could not give an explanation to the communists who asked me if God could be seen. I entered the Unification Church and listened to the Principle of Creation, and I came to realize the existence of God when I heard that the Principle explains God’s dual characteristics of plus and minus. I thought that everyone could use this explanation to learn about God. Doesn’t the Principle explain God as the dual characteristic of plus and minus? We learned the Principle directly from Father.

The Principle was not discovered just as a theory. Father had to fight Satan in bloody battles in order to find certain titles that God had given him. When we listen to the Principle, therefore, we must feel it in our heart, ‘ Oh, that’s true.’ Our understanding of the Principle can only become complete when we feel it within our hearts instead of just using our heads.

Father told us that we must cry for three hours if we are to give one hour of Principle lecture. The lecturer himself must feel the Principle with his heart. The same must be applied when we study the Principle however we must also be completely one with God’s *shimjeong* when we give the lectures. Father said that people will never be inspired if the lecturer just gives the lecture with his tongue alone.

Father always emphasizes that we will naturally memorize the Divine Principle Hoondok Chart if we read it ten, twenty, a hundred, or two hundred times. Our members have begun recently to read from the 1-hour, 3-hour, and 12-hour charts one hundred times each. I hear the testimonies that many people felt that their spirits were revived and that they felt the love of God. It is obvious that the lecturers themselves must be inspired by the Words if they are to inspire the hearts of their students.

My husband, Mr. Eu Hyo Won, also said that we must come to complete realization that the Principle is the truth while we are alive. However, he appeared through a spiritually bright person and confessed “I thought the Principle was the truth but the Principle is actually love.”

In conclusion, we must feel the Principle with our heart. The Principle lecturer

176

therefore must be able to lecture so that the students can feel the Principle with their heart also.

I felt while reading The Divine Principle, during a 40-day training in Cheongpyeong, that ‘ God has gone through so much suffering for 6,000 years in order to restore humanity.’ The sole purpose of 6,000 years of human history is to discover each and every person living. That is why those who listen to the lectures can’t help but to shed many drops of tear. We must feel the Principle within our heart.

177

My Appointment as Colorado Regional Leader

I have only been able to convey the Words of Father as I’ve heard them.

I received the Words of Father that fell upon me like rain. I was just a clueless child, oblivious to the values of his Words, listening to Father’s Words while desperately fighting against the Satan that came to me in the form of sleep. My only treasure now is the days in the past when I was drowning in Father’s Words, just as a honey bee that fell inside of a honey jar.

I’ve made the determination to convey all of Father’s precious Words that I was able to hear to the world before I go to the spirit world. I want to testify about Father who was so big and masculine in his younger days, and Father who was a human just like us but was able to do things that even God couldn’t do.

I can’t remember how hard we cried in Cheongpa Dong church after we were expelled from our university. We were then thrown out of our own houses by our parents, who told us that they will no longer treat us as their children unless we go back to the university and apologize for our sins. We were abandoned from every angle.

In the end, we gathered at the church to study and listen to Father’s Words, and we became like Father’s daughters. So we saw and heard many things. I have a tendency to drag meetings because I learned a lot of things while serving Father directly.

Father told me to come to America in 1983. My initial thought was that Father probably took pity on me because I was his lonely daughter who lived alone and he wanted me to stay close to him and serve him just as Mrs. Ji Seng Ryeon or other wives from the 36-couples. I lived alone for ten years after Father had gone to America so I thought Father simply wanted me to be next to him.

However Father told me suddenly, "Gil Ja! Welcome. Kim Gwang Heh went back to Korea so we've got an opening now. Go to Colorado and become the regional leader there." I answered, "What? Do you mistake me for a man? Why would you make a woman do a man's job?" I was actually disappointed. Mother however was even more extreme. "Hey, The Rocky Mountains are in Colorado so it's the highest land. Since you are in such a high place, you will be able to serve God from the closest of places."

I went to America after ten years of separation and Father sent me directly to the front line. I felt as if my heart of yearning for Father melted away pretty quickly, so to speak. There are times that we don't know what Father is thinking. Father's essence however is love and all that he does is out of love. Father is the kind of person who always worries about how he will guide people, like me, to feel his love and to resemble him.

Father told us "I want to meet you because you have the heart of wanting to meet me and not wanting to let me go. Otherwise, I would not even desire to come here."

One day during his meal in East Garden, he asked Mr. Kamiyama, "Hey! What is True Love? Talk about True Love." Surprised in middle of his meal, Mr. Kamiyama answered in a mumble. Father yelled, "What is that? Put it in one sentence, one sentence!" So he became even more perplexed. He had the task of putting into one sentence all the things Father had taught. It was obviously difficult. Father then said should I speak and began to give the following explanation.

"True Love is the heart that makes you want to see the person even though you just parted, want to eat with the person even though you just finished your meal, want to sleep with the person even though you just woke up from sleeping together, want to talk to the person even though you just spoke, and want to keep talking to the person, and do such

178

things with the person without an end."

Since True Love is the constant yearning, we will stay together for eternity if we

practice True Love.

The heart of such yearning will spring forth infinitely inside of a person who

possesses True Love. True Love has a quality of infinity. False love however drives people to use each other and be conditional. Relationships based on such love will be destroyed as soon as they find no more value in one another. At that point, they will have depleted each other. False love therefore cannot last infinitely.

I was not able to joyfully accept Father's first command to become a regional leader, to someone who just arrived in America. So I was hesitant for a long time. However, it was Father's command so I headed to Colorado.

Colorado is very cold. The snow stays well into May. I was traversing to the middle of a mountain when I was suddenly embraced by cold breeze. I ended up catching a severe cold. I even thought that I might die there. Was I that useless?

I had a dream later that day where I saw Father in my dream. Father said to me "My body hurts so much. Put some medicine on it, please." The medicine was in Father's hand. Father had a very severe rash on his back but he was completely cured when I applied the medicine. Father then said "Oh, I can now lie down with my back on the floor."

I felt at that time that ' Even an inadequate child like me could still be helpful to Father.' and I made my determination to work as the regional leader of Colorado as Father wished. Once I woke up from the dream, I thought ' Oh, I must lessen Father's pain. Oh well. Father wants me to work as the state leader of Colorado so I must do so.'

After this experience, Father explained to me the reason that I had to be a state leader in this way:

"Do you know why I'm doing this? I've brought you here to work in place of your husband who went to the spirit world. It is because you must connect the early period of Korean Unification, when there was so much *jeongseong* and *shimjeong*, to the young members of America. That's why I have brought you." I could not help but to obey Father's Words.

This is before Father went to Danbury prison. In hindsight, I think Father wanted to call in the leaders who victoriously endured the hardships of the early periods in Korea in order to help the young American members at the time of great tribulation.

179

The importance of the life of donating

Father told the members to not only give one tenth of their income but rather give one third of their income.

He also explained about the indemnity we must pay for failing to tithe.

Heaven punishes us with material things if we fail to tithe. People offered material things to God in the age of The Old Testament. Father told us that children became the offerings in the age of The New Testament and the parents are the offering in the Holy Testament age. Offerings have developed through these stages. If we properly tithe, however, Father told us that the indemnity ends with material things.

If we use our material things improperly, our children will be punished, and then the parents will be punished if we do not repent and continue our improper practice. Therefore, we must properly tithe in order to prevent indemnity. Tithing creates a barrier that blocks hardships from coming to our family. Therefore, we must not donate with money that is left-over.

Father says that in Principle we must tithe one third of our income. When I was going to the Headquarters church, there were more people who tithed 10 percent than those who tithed on third of their income. We should steadily tithe one tenth and we must try our best to tithe one third.

We do not lose by donating to the church. Proper tithing leads to our children's well-being and family affairs will take their course smoothly. We must donate to the church first then offer a prayer of repentance so that we don't wind up in the hospital; we also do this so that our children won't suffer from ailments. We must block unfortunate occurrences from coming to us with material things first. If we fail to block the invasion of Satan with material things, our children will suffer from the indemnity, and the parents will suffer if it does not stop with the children. You have to offer in the order of material things, children, and parents. Donations are the most basic step in blocking all invasions of Satan. We must therefore diligently tithe.

There are many amazing stories that became possible through donations. Those who do not donate cannot even be called members. Please try your best to donate up to one third of your income. You will find a way if you put it into practice. Then our children will never have to go to the hospital and our house will be never burglarized. I live like that.

I have a lot of experiences through the miracle of donation. I experienced miracles in my family and also when I was a school student.

If we do not donate or do church activities even after learning about Heaven's Will, our family will suffer from spiritual difficulties. Children catch sicknesses or other difficult things may happen. Therefore, we must either do church activities or donate. If we cannot participate in activities, we should at least make donations. By tithing, we support and set the condition that for those working in the front line of the church.

My father was a lawyer. One day, he called his assistant and asked, "Mr. Kim. Did you calculate my tithing for last month and donate it to the church?" Mr. Kim said "It's not been done yet." Then father said "No wonder why things weren't working out. Tithing hasn't been paid yet." I saw my father treating the donation to church in this way.

Lawyers do not get paid certain amount every month like other salaried employees, so it's easy to forget to tithe if one is not mindful of it. My father however tried so hard to tithe consistently. He once told me "Gil Ja, there is nothing more profitable than tithing. If we give one tenth of our income, then the other nine tenths will be protected by Heaven."

So I strictly participated in tithing once I joined the Unification Church. I received 20,000 won as an allowance every month when I was a student. The dormitory would cost

180

4,000 won back then. When I received my allowance every month, I would put 2,000 won in a yellow envelope and drop it in the donation box at the corner of the Ewha University's large hall. When I heard the envelope hitting the bottom of the box, I heard God's answer, telling me "Gil Ja, I received your *jeongseong*."

I always felt so happy whenever I heard God's answer. That was my time to be with God, so I always spent the money on my personal things after first dropping the tithe envelope; whether it be morning or night. I feel that I was guided to join The Unification Church because of my observant tithing.

Father told us that everyone here on Earth must have their own secret passage through which they are closely connected with God, a passage only known to God and themselves. I believe my passage was tithing. I never thought deeply about how the money was used. I only strictly tithed because that's what I learned from my father.

I felt at ease whenever I dropped the tithing envelope into the box, and the rest of the 20,000 won was happily used. I never lived my life extravagantly. I paid 4,000 won to the dormitory and spent the rest to buy books. That was before I joined The Unification Church, and I purchased a Bible commentary to learn about the things in The Bible that

I couldn't understand. I also purchased some pharmaceutical books. The bookstores at the entrance of Chungmu-ro Seoul sold a lot of Japanese books.

The price of those books arranged from 1,000 to 3,000 won. Where are they now? My father became angry with me and cut off my allowance after I was expelled from the school. I had to sell those books and live off of the money for a few months. I would have starved to death if I had misspent the money. I was saved because I had invested in books. It felt as if God was giving me back the money I gave in tithing.

I receive wisdom after I tithe. Heaven tells me where I should spend the rest of the money. Money is not wasted away. If I tithe, I become knowledgeable of where I should spend money and where I shouldn't. If I don't tithe, my money disappears and I don't even know where I spent it all. You probably have such experiences as well.

Tithing is such a serious problem when we look at it this way. In truth, one tenth is not enough. We must donate one third.

Our donation cultivates our spirit and body, and it also supports us. Tithing leads to more profit. Our good deeds will be recorded in the spirit world when we donate, and it's OK even if we die before being able to use it all. Our descendants will live in prosperity because of us.

When I worked as a traveling missionary in Japan, Father looked at me one day and said "Gil Ja! You should donate the money you receive from the members as much as possible." Since then, I've been donating one third of the money I receive from members. If someone gives me 100,000, I always donate 30,000. However, strangely enough, I don't feel any shortage of money. If I am ever in need of clothes or shoes, somebody always gives me what I need.

People are meant to live for such public purposes. Those who only live for their own sake will not receive help from others. People will not want to help such people. Therefore, we must save the church first and spend the rest of the money for public purposes.

181

The meaning of Hoondok

Father told us that when we give sermons, we should read His Words with members, summarize the Words while trying to obtain deeper insight into the Will, and exchange our *shimjeong* with each other.

Father had an opportunity to see a lecturer from House of World Peace and Unification giving Divine Principle lecture with a Divine Principle Summary Red Hoon Dok Chart in March 1999. Father noticed Mother walk into the room while the lecture was on the way and He told her “Mom, this is good. Anyone can give a Principle lecture using this.”

Then Father told me to go to Japan with Mrs. Erikawa. Mrs. Erikawa’s mission was to mobilize, and my mission was to educate. Father told me to educate 22,000 people as Principle lecturers so that they can be sent all over the world. Father always worried that there just weren’ t people able to lecture about the Principle.

Father said that we should use examples from Father’s Words when we have to give examples during Principle lectures.

Father gave me the mission to spread his Words to the whole world until I take my last breath. That is why I have come to publish this book which testifies Father’s Words relevant to the Principle.

I joined the church when I was very young and I listened to Father’s Words at a very close distant. I sometimes dozed off because I felt my eyelids were heavy with sleep. Father told me “Don’ t doze off. Satan will invade you.” but I only thought “How could Satan invade me when I can’ t even see him anywhere.” and only wished that Father would stop speaking.

I now repent that I was so sinful. It was only natural, however, that I got tired since I woke up at seven and stayed up late until midnight. Nonetheless, the Words to which I listened are recorded in my Spirit Body; whether I listened to them while staying awake or dozing off. This is why sometimes the most appropriate things to say escape my mouth when I am meeting someone or something happens.

When I went to America, people there told me “Mrs. Eu is strong, honest, practical, and she is a walking dictionary when it comes to Father’s Words.”

When members told Father “Mrs. Eu speaks about things unknown to us that are very inspirational.” Father told them “It is because it is not Sa Gil Ja speaking but it is the spirit world speaking through her.”

If you to read Father’s Words continuously, you will feel that Father’s Words or the Principle is engraved onto your Spirit Body. If that happens then the words that we need to tell others will suddenly appear in our mind.

I believe these are God's living Words and love. There will soon come the age, the age of Hoondok, where those who read Father's Words often will become more important, whereas those who didn't read the Words will become useless. At that time, Father would be able to pass into the spirit world without worries, we will stop different sects from appearing, and The Unification Church will forever grow. Reading Father's Words, or Hoondok, is truly the 'source of life' and 'source of love' that are given to us by Father.

Father said that he had to think deeply and very seriously in order to find the term 'Hoondok.'

The Chinese character of Hoon(訓讀) is made of 'to teach(訓),' 'word(言)', and 'river(川).' In other words, it means river of words. Rivers take all sorts of garbage and release them into the ocean. Then the land becomes clean. It means that we will realize of

182

our short-comings, repent our sins, and receive forgiveness by reading the Words. Also, rivers flow horizontally whether its bed is high or low. It means equilibrium. It especially means the equilibrium of the chosen people. In other words, whoever reads the Words can become the chosen people of God regardless of their race or their nation.

The next letter Dok(讀) consists of 'word(言)' and 'sell(賣).' In other words, the Words are given to others. The Words must be given to others just as a salesperson would give his merchandise to someone. Just as it would be immoral for a businessman to not sell his items, even though he has them, just because he doesn't like the price, it is sinful to not give the Words to everyone that exists.

Therefore, Hoon(訓) is about receiving forgiveness(贖) and Dok(讀) is about helping others to receive forgiveness. Hoondok has such a meaning.

Father told us "Practicing Hoondok helps our faith to take root. The blood of those who have the will boils whenever they read the Words. Hoondok assemblies are held to proclaim Father's Words, to proclaim True Love, to proclaim the culture of *shimjeong* in the Holy Testament, and to settle True Family."

Hoondok is like spring rain; it must happen for long time if we want to be soaked by it. We will not be soaked with inspiration nor be connected with the spirit world if take a month off and continuously start and stop Hoondok.

Father's Words, that we practice Hoondok, are recorded as one of the victories he won in his battles against Satan. We must apply this idea of tradition and train ourselves until we can fulfil the realm of cosmic liberation.

We unknowingly shed tears while reading Father's Words because our *shimjeong* unites with that of Father. Hoondok has such power. Hoondok is also like a storage battery. Father's Words are not of this world but of Heaven. The spirit world also works according to Father's Words. This is a serious reality.

Father's Words are not the type of words that will simply fade away in history. They are the quality of words that must be kept eternally as our last will to our descendants. Therefore, even though we may die, we must preserve these Words eternally. Such words, that are as important as treasures, are the Words we read everyday. (The above words are all Father's Words.)

The content of this book is derived primarily from the special lectures I gave in the Mobile Witnessing Team Divine Principle Training Workshop (graduating college students) and the special lectures during the 40-day Blessed Wives Workshops that began in 2005 at the Cheong Pyeong Heaven and Earth Training Center.

My sincere hope is for you to feel Father's powerful Words which he gave during the early days, his immense love towards God and humanity, and his sincere jeongseong for the providence. Through this, please become closer to True Parents in shimjeong.

Father Words are immensely high and holy. I am always repenting for my inability to practice the Word in my life. As I write this book, I wish to study the Words of Father together with you and begin to walk again the Way of Will.

정가 20,000원



9 791185 225005
ISBN 979-11-85225-00-5